



For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>

And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it

<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

Introduction

Pain Is A Victory

Introduction

"No"

Panting a sweating filled her while in her sleep

"No" 🙄 "Please Am Sorry don't hurt me"

She was crying an sweating not only is her heart closing in but everything is hurting, her hurt is hurting, her body is hurting and she's feeling tired from all the crying that is happening

"I will not provoke you again am sorry"

That was all the words coming out from her mouth, The gun went off

"Bang Bang Bang"

Screams filled the house as she wakes up from the dream she was dreaming and her friend rushed into the room and tried to keep her calm

Her: Calm down Ndie I am here

Ndie : It him again 😞😞 why can't he leave my dreams, everyday he's haunting me I want to live a normal life💔

Her : Shhh am here and he will not hurt you again 😞 It's all in the past now

Ndie : It doesn't feel like that he's haunting me what if he comes back?

Her : It been 8 years now he won't come back

Ndie : 😞😞

Her friend hugged her so tight, she is always having these dreams if not being shot, she's being beaten like an animal because of love!! Pain Became A Victory To Her.... 🖐️

✕

✕

✕

Nandi

My name is Nandile "Ndile" Zikhali am 25 years old, working in the restaurant I mean a person have to live right? Without money there's no life I mean how will you take care of yourself without money? I learnt that the hard way

Advertisement

am used to sleeping without food but am not there for now all in due time, am not beautiful am just a normal girl who is not so good shaped as well I have a belly for days, I have what they call stretch marks but they white now cause I took care of them, I have a messy hair, I have hips an just a normal ass whuuu if you could see me you'll just run an never come back 😊 am just a mess this is my story.... I had a tough life in my teenage life, It was never a good life for it all started when I left home because of the guy who sold me dreams, only to find out that he will ruin my life.... Let me take you back to when I was 16 years old those were the days I got stuck in my teenage life people calls it "iStage" but I call it Pain In Advance cause oh boy life was not my friend back than..... 😞😞

So embrace yourself as I take you to my change of life, when pain became my daily life.... **Will just start the story when she

was 16 so that you will understand what happened to her in the past but it based more on her 25 age going on"

Hope You Enjoy The Story.... Will Post on Monday's...Wednesday's...Fridays...Sunday's if you all luck I will post twice in a day....👏👏 thanks for the support....The first four inserts will be short after that they will be longer....

Diary ka Naledi

Insert 1

Nandi

School has always been my favourite place, well am done with school but watching learners passing at my door makes me want to cry 😞 I miss waking up and going to school you might be wondering how come am 16 but done with school well let us say my mother didn't have someone to watch me at the age of 4 so she decided to register me at school I started doing grade R just because I was clever at my grades they decided to let me start my grade 1 at the age of 5 so that's why am done at the age of 16, my mother is hustler she did everything she could to make me feel loved and feel like am the only girl in the world well my father is in the army so he comes back during his holidays 😞 we miss him so much, am just living with my big brother and my mother we not a rich family we are just normal, we don't sleep without eating, we do have clothes to wear so it is all good, today am going to register koVarsity I want to be a doctor I know 7 years is a long time but following your dreams is one of the best things in life.... I woke up cause my mother is

all singing in the kitchen you know when she wakes up she wants all of us to wake up like her 😊 me an my brother always complains about this I mean she wakes up at 6 an sing out loud we will have to wake up an do all our house chores after that you can sleep if you want or you can just do whatever you want to do well my mom is not that strict she does allow me to live my life, she hates booze but what can she do we teenagers so we have to live 😊 my brother is 21 years old so he also live his life to the fullest

I went to the kitchen to see my beautiful mother, she was in her black dress

phela she did her morning hygiene so she smells so great, I closed her eyes

Mom : Take these filthy hands of yours off my face wena 😊 who knows maybe you were busy with them at night

Me : Aibo mom jeez

Mom : Oh my God I thought it your brother 😊

I just laughed and kissed her cheek she wiped it cause am still in my sleep wear

Me : Jeez neevee will I play with you

Mom : Why?

Me : Because you weird

Mom : Says someone who's always weird like why are you still in your sleep wear at this time, come on wake from that chair and go bath baby come come

She clapped her hands I just smiled and went to my room to do my morning hygiene, I found my brother busy looking for something in my wardrobe

Me : Looking for something Skhalo

Skhalo : Am your brother you can't call me by my name

Me : Bhuti what are you looking for IN MY ROOOOOOOOOOM!!!

He looked at me like am crazy I mean what is he doing here?

Skhalo : am looking for my Jacket

Me : In my room? 😊

Skhalo : Yes in your room thief I know you wore it last week at your friends party so bring it back

Me : I don't know what you talking about

Skhalo : I have a video of you drunk so don't let me show mom

Me : Aww Bro

Skhalo : I want my jacket am going somewhere

Me : Fine it's in the washing busket

Skhalo : I will go ape on you don't test me Nandile Zikhali

Me : Scream!!

Skhalo : MOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOM I HAVE A V.....

Me : Shut up awww I will give you your jacket mxm

Skhalo : I love you sis 😊😊

Me : Well I don't

Skhalo : I know you will do month end 😊

Me : Well yeah true 😊 now get out I want to get ready

I gave him his jacket an he left my room, well he's my life we always like this, he usually sneaks me inside the house if am in trouble an doesn't want to see mom an I also do the same with him, actually let me say we got each others backs 😊 I did my morning hygiene after a while I got out an wore some clothes cause I want to leave just after eating cause am so hungry

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Am on my way now to the school am so scared, you know when a kid is scared of her first day at school? That is how am feeling whereas am only going there to register myself after that it when am going to study but still am scared.... I was on my way to the taxi rank when I felt like something is following me I looked behind an I saw a black Mercedes Benz following me the first thing that came to my mind is kidnap I heard a whistle I just looked forward an didn't look back the guy decided to talk

Guy : Aww queen am talking to you

I just kept quiet and kept on walking like nobody's business well don't look at me like that I don't know this guy and now he's talking to me jeez that more like a death warrant I tell you

Guy : Okay chill am not a gangster I just wanna give you a lift to the rank I mean a girl beautiful like you can't be burned by this sun

Me : Leave me alone

How I wish for my brother to just pop up with his stupid friends 😊 I so hate them with passion they are too dodgy for my likings

Guy : Am Sambulo, new in the neighborhood....please queen I just wanna give you a lift that's all

Me : Mr Revelation please leave me alone

Sambulo : 😊 so sweet I think I would live with you calling me like that

Me : If you don't leave me alone I will scream am sure you don't wanna piss off this community....imagine them cutting that

small dick that can't stay hidden cause I know that what you want with me 😏

Sambulo : Mmmm

Me : Go cause I will scream for real bitch 😏 look at these people

He looked around like a stupid puppy

Me : I will just say aaah they will come running now leave me alone Mr Revalation

Sambulo : Can't say that didn't scare me cause it did, well we will meet again

Me : In your dream now run along perv 😏

Sambulo : Mmmmm

Me : Nx

He drove away an I rushed to the taxi rank I mean who is he giving me a lift just because he's neq in the neighborhood..... Little did I know that my life will never be the same after this day 😏

Insert 2

Nandi

Days turned into weeks, school is not that bad well I made new friends 😊 am so happy I thought that maybe it will take some time to settle down.... Today am going to the mall with a friend that I found at varsity, she said that she will come with his brother I was like "it girls day out" she said that in order for that day out to be successful an fun we need her brother.... I don't know what that meant but it cool I will go cause I want some fresh air an in need of new clothes.....I did my hygiene than wore my black ripped skinny jean and a white vest, took my brothers sneakers I know he will kill me when he get back 😊 he wear the same size as me so everytime when I want to look good I use his clothes 😊 I went to the kitchen after that to see my mother she was sitting in the lounge watching the television

Me : mommy

Mom : Wuuuu look at you my angel, you looking so beautiful

Me : Thank you 😊 am going to the mall to see people

Mom : Don't see people an end up bringing me a grandchild

Me : Aibo 😊

Mom : There are hotels in the town

Me : Maaaa am going to the mall not the hotel 😊

Mom : Was just passing the message 😊 now pass me my bag so that I can give you money to bring me so potatoes

Me : 😊

Mom : Am serious I want the big one's 😊

Me : That's not going to happen

Skhalo have a car you were suppose to tell him to buy it for you

Mom : No I want you to buy it for me come on give me my bag

Yooo guys I was dragging my feets how can my mother do this to me, I took her bag an than gave it to her she was so laughing I wonder what's so funny cause she is about to ruin my fun 😞 she reached inside her bag an took out R300 she gave it to me

Mom : Buy potatoes and maize meal for me

I felt like crying 😞 I just feel like cancelling this mall thing but if I do she will just send me there still, I took my bag an looked at her she's so ready to laugh

Me : Okay um am going now bye

Mom : Am joking 😄😄 wuuu you should look at the sadness in your face it's like I just ruined your life

Me : Yeah 😄

Mom : Go an have fun that R300 is yours I wish I could give you more

Me : R300 is so big thank you so much mom you the best

I kissed her cheek an went my way, yooo I thought that she was so serious phela my mom can kill your vibe straight so am amazed that she was joking

✘

✘

✘

✘

After a while I was in the mall so I took my phone out and called my friend but I heard someone shouting from behind I looked at the back and saw her with a familiar guy

Sane : Baby love

Me : Hey boo

We hugged well my friend is a slay queen you know the heels and weaves girls? Yes!! That's her but she slays so damn good and her body is on fleek I tell you 😊 I don't know how she became my friend it's so good to be true if you know what I mean

Sane : Um this is my brother Sambulo

Shit that dickhead Mr Revelations 😊😊

Sambulo : We meet again beautiful

Sane : You guys know each other? Bro you know your things

Sambulo : Yeah she's that girl I told you about

Sane : Oh the one who chased you away

Sambulo : Yeah

Sane : My world Ndile you did well 😁😁 he's such a perv

Sambulo : Watch it am still your old brother

Sane : Whatever Sambulo but she did well

Am standing here like am in the cinema watching a boring movie that doesn't want to end but am watching it cause am forced to watch it

Sane : So are you good baby?

Me : Yes am good

Sane : Where are we starting

Me : I don't know you choose

Sane : Okay you follow me I will teach you things

Me : I don't want you heels

Sane : Wuuu nevee I've seen you slay with some sneakers so No ways am taking you to your favourite spot

God if she knew she wouldn't be doing that cause I don't have any money for those worse she made it worse bringing her brother who's busy staring at me making me feel uneasy I wish someone could come an rescue me

Sane : This place is so amazing, I just feel like taking it home

Me : mmmmm

Sambulo :So how old are you Ndile?

Me : 16 soon to be 17

Sambulo : Already in varsity?

Me : Yes

Sane : Pecks of being clever bro

Sambulo : So your full name is?

Me : Nandile

Sambulo : Oh it a nice name I guess I will call you Ndile like everyone else

Me : Yeah

Sambulo : So tell me how about I take you out some day?

Sane : Say yes he's been nagging me wanting to see you.... Opps I didn't say anything

So that's why she came with him this slut 😊😏 I said it remember "Soooo good to be true"

Sambulo : I will take your numbers from Sane I hope you don't mind

Me : I..

Sane : She don't mind bro 😊 isn't Baby

She said looking at me with a smirk is this girl selling me to her brother? What the hell is going on here?

: NANDILEEEEEEEEEEEEEEE

I jumped an looked back to be met by my brother am sure the mall stopped an looked at him the way she's shouting ngakhona

Skhalo : My sneakers 😏

Me : perv 😁😁

He started coming my way I tried to run but he was fast so I ended up on the floor imagine

Skhalo : Take them out 😁

Me : Oh my world an wearing a white vest

Skhalo : I don't care I'll even carry you home if you don't take them out

Me : What will I wear?

Skhalo : I'll give you the push ins that am wearing

Me : You crazy 😁😞

Skhalo : Taaake them out or I will tell moooooom 😞

This guys loves to shout an act like a jerk now he's on top of me people I have a crazy brother in the mall behaving like a jerk 😞

Me : GEEET OFF ME

Skhalo : NO not until you give me what I want

His friends were laughing and I ended up laughing I mean who does something like this now people are watching us

Narrated

Sambulo felt disgusted by this and he wanted to punch this dickhead for interrupting him while talking to Nandile he's so angry and hell will freeze he will make sure that he gets Ndile one way or the other, Sane was so scared that Sambulo will take his frustration on her when they get home

Insert 3

Nandi

Yesterday turned out to be a disaster I mean I ended up going home without doing any shopping phela I was so dirty in a way that my pride didn't allow me to stay at the mall... Well I left Sane an Sambulo at the mall an went home with Skhalo they were not pleased at all but I didn't have a choice....now it's in the morning an I will have to get ready for class I woke up an did my morning hygiene after a while I was done while dressing up my phone rang an it a number I don't even know so I answered

Me : Hello

Caller : Morning beautiful

I must be dreaming why would a guy with such a beautiful voice call me early in the morning an who is he?

Me : Um hey how are you?

Caller : Am good your voice sounds so sexy an innocent on the phone

Jeez I found myself smiling an blushing like an idiot

Me : Don't mean to be rude who am I speaking to?

Caller : Sambulo

Wow just wow his voice is not bad at all but why is he calling me 😊

Me : Oh why are you calling me?

Sambulo : Just to check on you I hope you not angry

Me : No am not actually am good however I was getting ready for school

Sambulo : Oh Yea even Sane is getting ready for school will be dropping her off after she's done

Me : Oh that's good 😊

Sambulo : Let me not keep you so long on the call I will see you in the afternoon cause surely I won't see you now

Me : Yeah hopefully

Sambulo : Have yourself a beautiful day sweetness

He hung up the phone guys I don't know but his voice on the phone it sends butterflies in my stomach 😞🤔 however am not there I wore something than after that I went to the kitchen to find something to eat I found my mother looking into space so I just knew that it either they faught with my father or she just misses him

Me : Morning mom

She looked at me an sighed after that she took her cup an went to put it in the sink than sat down

Mom : Morning my angel did you sleep well?

Me : Yes I did you?

Mom : Okay so I need to tell you something baby

Me : What's that?

Mom : I am going to see your father next week

Me : what wrong is he okay? An where are you going to see her cause he's at work

Mom : I'll explain everything when I get back okay?

Me : Mom

Mom : Yes?

Me : Is daddy okay? Are you guys good?

Mom : Yes he's okay an we more than good 😊 I just miss him

She's hidding something an I will just let her be she will talk when she's ready, I hope they are not divorcing 😞

Mom : Don't worry we are not divorcing it just another story for another day, for go to school I love you

Me : I love you too mom 😊

I went to hug her so tight I can feel that she's not okay

Advertisement

I hope my daddy is not shot or something cause like for real something did happen to him..... After like 10 mins I was on the

taxi to school you know I should get myself maybe a bike this
taxi life 😊 you just become late even if you woke up early
marora because of traffic or the taxi not getting full 😊 a bicycle
would be great Skhalo would laugh his ass out that day 😊

Now am at school an found Sane sitting at the school canteen

Me : Hey babes

Sane : Hey

Me : You good?

Sane : You ditched me what do you expect? Am angry

Me : Am so sorry you know my brother was just being an ass

Sane : Your brother?

Me : Yes

Sane : That guy is not your boyfriend?

Me : Boy... 😊😊 no freakin way he is not my boyfriend

Sane : Oh God **sigh** that's a relief

That didn't sound good what is going on here?

Sane : Don't look at me likw that, I can't have you dating

What?

Sane : Jeez you so dumb...who will I spend time with if you dating at least if you date both of us must date

Me : You mean that? Jeez girl if I date an you don't date that's not my problem 😊

Sane : Ouch that hurts 😊 at least you must alert me okay?

Me : You too okay?

Sane : Yes I will

After saying that she looked down I wonder what's going on here

Sane : So your brother is so crazy

Me : You don't wanna know he's a pain in the ass 😊 how about Sambulo

Sane : How about him?

Me : Is he that homely?

Sane : Once upon a time he was but now he's not, he don't have time for me anymore

Me : Sorry to hear that

Sane : No don't feel bad I guess he's teaching me that I will live without him one day

Me : Huh?

Sane : When am married hau 😊 jeez Ndile come on!!

Me : You talk in riddles 😊 well yeah but hopefully the old bubbly Sambulo will come back

Sane : Yeah so what your first class?

Me : Maths

Sane : You can go I'll follow just now

Me : Well my class starts in an hour

Sane : Jeez okay I'll sit with you

Me : No you going to class come

Sane : N....

I pulled her up an she winced I looked at her an she looked away

Me : Are you okay?

Sane : Yeah

Me : Let's go

Sane : Okay..

She limped an I stopped an looked at her she's wearing sneakers 😬 that's the first.... What the hell happened

Me : You limping Sane : I fell

Me : Oh my God did you get hurt?

Sane : Obviously but I'll be okay

Me : Am so sorry Sane : Yeah

Me : I also fell which means yesterday we were falling 😊

Sane : 😊 yeah but the difference is that I got hurt in the process imagine falling in front of Sambulo's friends I was so embarrassed I felt like screaming so that the world hear my cry's

With that said she left me thinking what doea she means "world hear ny cry's"

Insert 4

Nandile

School went by with Sane limping and you could see that her whole body is on fire, after all the lecture I went to the library waiting for Sane to finish up her studies so that we can go home together..... A message came through so I opened it

Sambulo : Can I fetch you? I promise I'll be a good boy

I just smiled to myself because I never had a guy who is interested in me, well to be honest I didn't have time for boys and I have never dated anyone all my life 😞 I know that people may find it lame but guys am just not ready well maybe a little cause am growing old so at some point I will have to date..... I responded to the message

Me : 😊 No problem Mr Revelation you can come and fetch me

After that I took my phone and threw it inside my bag then studied after like an hour I went to check if Sane is done as yet so I found her already with Sambulo she just flashed me a weak smile how I miss the bubbly Sane 😞😞

Me : Oh thank God you done I was so bored at the library

Sambulo : Hello to you too 😊

Me : Um hey am so sorry was just worried about Sane

Sane : No don't be am okay I told you this moss

Me : Yeah I know am sorry

Sane : It okay so I will just get in the car and wait

Sambulo : Well I was thinking that I can give you some money for taxi fare you know I wanna spend some time with Ndile

I looked at Sane her smile faded away 😞 aibo I can't let that happen I mean we friends and she's not feeling okay

Me : Rubbish she can come with us

Sane : No I will find a taxi

Sambulo : Problem solved she fell it not like she was kicked or something so don't worry about her she'll be okay, she's used to falling

Me : Come on Sane you can't go a....

Sane : it okay I will be fine don't worry about me

She limped away an I felt bad I mean how can Sambulo do this to his sister? 😞 he opened the door for me an I got inside the car although not happy because of Sane..... After like a while we were driving home actually I am going home

Sambulo : Am sorry if you didn't get my point about sending Sane home by taxi fare

Me :

Sambulo : The thing is that I love you an I wanted to spend some time with, I don't know but when I saw the other day I knew that we are meant to be

How can he be so confidence by lying I mean "Meant to be" is far fetched 😊 so I just smiled

Sambulo : I know that maybe you might be wondering who am I? An why the sudden interest? just that I love you an I really need you in my life, you know I told Sane about you cause I was so mesmerized when I saw you 😊 please allow me to love an show you respect an happiness

Me : S....

Sambulo : You can think about it I will wait for you

Me : Okay will think about it

Sambulo : What do you wanna do now? Lunch maybe?

Me : Um No I just wanna go home

I didn't wanna go to the mall cause I know there's a possibility that Skhalo is there... He will have a heart attack if he was to see me with a guy 😊 so nje he drove me home an after a while I got out an went home I was so tired I needed to rest, I got inside an it seemed like I am alone so I went to my room an took a quick shower after that I took a nap I didn't even get to close my eyes cause Skhalo just came barging like this room is a tarven he was not smiling like always

Skhalo : Who was that dropping you off?

Oh my God he saw me...what will I say now cause I know he will just go ape on me

Me : um just a guy I go with to school

Skhalo : Don't make me a fool that guy is so old to be going to varsity

Me : Aibo don't judge people, he didn't have money phela when he was young so now he have it

Skhalo : I know you making me a fool but let me tell you something if ever I were to find out that you are dating that dickhead I will murder you an not even your mother will fight for you do you hear me?

Me : Skhalo

Skhalo : Aibo 🙄

Me : Bhuti can you chill me an that guy we not dating an we won't

Skhalo : It better be like that 🤔

He got out of my room like he's so over protective towards me and I don't blame him as his only sister so he's just worried about me and I appreciate that..... Days turned into weeks and weeks turned into months, it has been two Months now with Skhalo still not okay busy watching me like an hawk, even if Sambulo give me a lift home he will just drop me off far away from home cause am afraid that Skhalo will just kill me well I decided to give this dating thing a chance.... Sane has been pleading with me to date her brother I mean what's there to lose, I didn't love him I was just doing it because I felt like now it's the time for me to date well as days went on with him treating me so good I fell for him so hard 😊 I don't know if am doing the right thing or what? Well me and Sambulo are official now and I told him that it's my first time doing all of this and he said I mustn't worry he will take care of me and he will teach me a lot of things about relationships, he's such a gentleman if you know what I mean so today am not going to varsity I will just be at home my friend from school is coming to visit me this side well she relocated to Jozi because of varsity...I woke up and did my morning hygiene after that I was done I wore my shorts and vest cause I wanted to clean the house a visitor have to come to a clean house 😊 says my mother that I clean when someone is coming to visit and it true wuuuu I have a lot of energy even if my father is coming to see us I just clean but when it just us am so lazy that Skhalo cleans the house

sometimes my phone rang an I answered it without looking who's calling

Me : Yes

Sambulo : Aww not even "Babe"

Me : Oh God so sorry I didn't check who's calling

Sambulo : No it fine what are you doing?

Me : Am just cleaning the house cause my friend is coming

Sambulo : Oh so can I see you?

Me : When?

Sambulo : Now

Me : My friend will be here in the next 30 minutes Sambulo

Sambulo : So I won't see you?

Me : Maybe in the afternoon I will see you

Sambulo : No problem, I have to go I love you

Me : I love you too

He dropped the call so I went to make something to eat I feel so hungry an tired now....when I was about to reach the kitchen a

knock came through I went to open to be met by my friend I screamed so loud cause I missed her

Me : Oh my God Zama is this you 😊

I hugged her so tight with her also laughing with Joy

Zama : Yessss this is me

Me : I missed you so much

Zama : Well here I am Ndie an I missed you too it felt like I left this place for a year maybe 😞

Me : Tell me about it let me take your bag an put it in my room you can feel at home bra you know every corner of this house

Zama : Sure I do

I went to put her bags in my room am so happy guys to see my friend after a long time, after that I went to join her in the kitchen

Me : I see you made yourself feel at home

Zama : I was so hungry 😊

Me : I know you too well

Zama : So where is mama?

Me : She went to see my father an don't ask me where cause I don't know an she said we will talk when she comes back

Zama : Do you think there's a problem?

Me : At first I did think like that but you know my parents they will tell me when they are ready.... They like to hide things maybe my father is coming back home, I just don't wanna stress myself an find out that it is nothing in the end

Zama : I understand

Me : What about you?

Zama : Well I miss this place especially you

Me : I know 😊 so how's life there?

Zama : Well it's great however I still miss this place

Me : I understand you

Well Zama lost her parents when we were doing grade 10 so she lived with us till then, now she's all alone in varsity I guess it taking a toll on her

Me : Don't worry just study and make mama proud then you will come back

Zama : Or I can buy a house that side and you should relocate

Me : Try telling that to our mother

Zama : 😊 so where is our brother?

Me : He's in the street God knows doing what 😊

Zama : I miss him, boyfriend?

Me : Yeah decided to try

Zama : Wuuuuuu welcome to the club girl

Me : I just feel like I'll get hurt or something, I do love him but am scared 😞

Zama : I understand you it's your first time so that's why you feeling this way just go with the flow what I would advise you is that don't rush things 🤔

Me : I won't

Zama : Now let's catch up, yaz am working at a restaurant for extra cash

Me : So you coping?

Zama : Yes I am an it great

Me : If you happy am happy too

We looked at each other an smiled, I love this soul an I would die where she dies 😞

✎

✎

✎

✎

Later I got a call from Sambulo telling me that he's outside an he wants to see me so I just sneaked out cause I don't want Skhalo to see me I respect him too much well he's not home as yet I went out it was late an already dark outside an I found him waiting for me two houses away from home he came out an hugged me he always smell so good 😊

Me : Babe

Sambulo : How are you my love?

Me : Am good how are you?

Sambulo : I missed you sthandwa sam we need to talk

Me : Am listening

Sambulo : Am going to Jo'Burg next week I want you to come with me

Me : come with you 😬

Sambulo : Yes I can't leave you here, I mean Nandile I love you an I want to always be with you, you can study in Jozi there are so many schools there I can make things happen

Me : Sa....

Sambulo : Baby come on I need you to do this with me, I will never hurt you, you will live like a queen that you are please baby

Me : My fri....

Sambulo : This is about me an you can you please focus on us not your friend 😊

Me : Oh

Sambulo : Please baby think about this.... Please

Me : I'll think about it don't worry 😞

I don't know what to do, I love him but I don't think I'll be able to live without my mother 😞 even Skhalo won't allow it I don't know what to do 😞💔

Sambulo : I love you an I'll take care of you think about it

That's the problem every word he says sounds right 💔 but wrong at the same time

Insert 5

Nandile

I went home so lost an didn't know what to do an what to think, I mean my parents would never allow me to just up an leave especially with a guy 😞 I don't know what to do cause I really do love Sambulo it like he bewitched me cause I just can't get him out of my mind 😞 I found Zama busy on her phone so I just went to take a quick shower an after a while I got out an went to Zama who just looked at me

Zama : What's wrong?

Me : I need to ask you something

Zama : Am listening

Me : What would you do if your boyfriend was to ask you to relocate with him?

Zama : For what reason?

Me : Just answer me

Zama : No I will need to know the reason behind the relocating, I mean I can't just leave my home just because the boyfriend wants to just relocate 😊

Me : Oh

Zama : Who wants to relocate?

Me : My boyfriend

Zama : You thinking of going with him?

Me : I love him

Zama : What will you tell mama?

Me : I don't know Zama, I don't know 😞

Zama : why does he wants to go? An where is this place?

Me : Jozi an I don't know the reason

Zama : Babe I love you okay? However I will not support you on this I mean you can't just up an go with a guy an worse you don't even know why you relocating I feel like this guy wants to rule your life

Me : Thanks for the advice

I just wanted to sleep an ignore Zama cause I don't think Sambulo is trying to rule my life or maybe he is 😞

Zama : I don't want to fight with you babes.... Maybe he loves you an don't want to live without you....you need to think carefully before you make huge decisions

Me : Thank you my friend I will think this through

Zama : Now tell me about this guy

Me : Well he's just a normal guy

Zama : Jeez who on earth would describe her boyfriend as normal?

Me : Nandile Zikhali

Zama : wuuu 😊 I don't wish to be your boyfriend

Me : 😊

We talked some more an laughed to all the jokes we shared after that we slept an woke up in the morning, I didn't sleep well because of all this relocating thing.....I took my phone an called my mother who answered almost immediately

Mom : Baby

Me : Hey mum how are you?

Mum : Am good baby an how are you?

Me : Am good just missing you an dad...

Mum : I will be coming back next week with your father

Me : Oh God can't wait to see you 😊

Mum : We can't wait to see you all, let me hope Zama would still be there

Me : Yes she will be here, schools are closed

Mum : How I miss my babies.... Are you already awake?

Me : Yes I miss your singing 😊

Mum : Wuuu an here I was thinking that maybe you get irritated 😊

Me : No it's the best wake up call

Mum : Mxm I have to go baby I will call you guys later your father needs me

Me : Can I talk to him?

Mum : Well he's in the shower

Me : Jeez mum byee 😊

I hung up the phone cause why would my mother tell me what she's saying, I didn't wanna here what she said to even imagine both my parents doing it jeeeeez 🤔🤔 makes me feel sick, I woke up did my morning hygiene an after that I went to the kitchen to make something to eat... I found Skhalo already doing it

Me : Bhuti (brother)

Skhalo : Baby sis slept well?

Me : Yes

Skhalo : I missed you yesterday

Me : I missed you too where were you?

Skhalo : Was busy with work

Me : I see

Skhalo : So what's new?

Me : Um nothing

Skhalo : Ayy maan I can see that something is bothering you

Me : Am dating

He kept quiet an carried on doing what he was doing I don't know if he's angry or what

Skhalo : I know

Me : Huh?

Skhalo : Am your old brother so it my job to watch over you so I know that you dating that guy with a car

Me :

Skhalo : What I want to tell you is take care of yourself for me that's all I want you to do for me

Me : I will

Skhalo : An since I knoq it doesn't mean I want to know your affairs 😊👉

Me : I know hao 😊

Skhalo : Where is Zama?

Me : Sleeping

Skhalo : I think it is time for me to sing so th....

Zama : Don't start am awake

She said coming from the room we just laughed an they hugged

Skhalo : Baby sis how are you?

Zama : All is good I missed you

Skhalo : I know hey! I also miss myself sometimes 😊

Zama : Ain't we full of ourselves now

Me : I see that too

Skhalo : Not a bad thing 😊

Me : So mummy said they coming back next week

Skhalo : Really?

Zama : Can't wait to see them, it been a while

Me : Tell me about it especially our father yoooo

Skhalo : Yes I think we should make something nice for them

Me : That sounds like a good idea

Zama : We should start planning, you know when a parent says am coming back next week expect him or her early even this week they can come

Skhalo: That's true 😊 remember when we were having a party Ndile they came back early an we were in trouble for days

Me : I remember that so well 😊

We talked more and we even planned the thing we will do for our parents, after some time I was on my way to the shop with Zama when we saw Sambulo's car coming our way

Me : Here comes Sambulo

Zama : Oh let me meet the guy who stole my friend's heart

Me : 😊

He parked right in front of us and looked at me after that he got out of the car

Sambulo : Babe

Me : Hey 😊

He hugged me and kissed my cheek

Advertisement

after that he looked at Zama

Sambulo : Lady

Zama : Hi

Sambulo : this must be the famous friend

Me : Yes this is Zama

Sambulo : Nice to know you Zama

Zama : Likewise 😊

Sambulo : So can we talk?

Me : Um Za....

Zama : No it's okay I'll wait for you inside the shop

Me : Okay

Zama went away leaving me with Sambulo who was so staring at me with a smile in his face while holding me

Sambulo : How are you my baby?

Me : Am good u?

Sambulo : Am well, so did you think about what I asked you?

Me : No

Sambulo : Come on Babe on friday am going so I want to know

Me : My parents are not back Sambulo

Sambulo : Make a plan,plan a lie maybe just try Babe please

Me : I can't lie to my parents they will feel it

Sambulo : Don't you love me?

Me : I do

Sambulo : Than what's so hard? I mean I can leave everything for you an I just only want one thing your time I won't be able to live without you 😞

Me : I....

Sambulo : I will take care of you, I will provide everything your parents were providing, I will register you to any school you want an after that we will come back here an I will pay the lobola for you cause I know you'll make a perfect wife

I looked at this man promising me a good life, filled with his love an filled with joy, I mean I love him an I wanna spend the rest of my life with him, it feels like he also wants the same as me

Sambulo : Babe please make up your mind 🖐️ I won't let anything happen to you I will protect you same as your parents 😊 just say yes 🖐️

He said that kissing me all over the face an I giggled like a small girl 😊 so much love I see in his eyes

Sambulo : Love

Me : Fine I will go with you an I will speak to my parents

Sambulo: You won't regret it my love

Me : I really hope I don't

He just hugged me I just have a bad feeling about all of this at the same time I just love him an wants to be with him always so am willing to do whatever it takes to do what he wants me to do cause he makes me happy

✕

✕

✕

After a while I got a call from Sane so I answered immediately I mean it been a while

Me : Chum

Sane : Hey um how are you?

Me : Am good it been a long time without hearing from you

Sane : Well I went to visit home

Me : Oh Sambulo didn't tell me

Sane : Well he didn't want me to go cause he was afraid that my mother would ask questions like why is he not visiting them

Me : I understand

Sane : So how are you,? I mean I miss you

Me : I miss you too

Sane : How are things between you an Sambulo?

Me: we good babe nothing to complain about

Sane : I miss him so much

Me : Oh shame, we are relocating

The line went dead after that I heard a sigh

Me : Sane??

Sane : Um I have to go my mum is calling me

Me : Come on Sane

Sane : I have to go byee

She dropped the call I know that she's avoiding me I wonder what's wrong with Sambulo an her?

Zama : You okay?

Me : I don't know

Zama : What's wrong?

Me : Sane just dropped a call on me because am relocating

Zama : Sane?

Me : Oh Sambulo's sister

Zama : why would she do that? Unless there is a drama we not aware of

Me : I don't know

Zama :don't you think maybe she thinks all of this is a big mistake that you will regret? I mean you don't even know this guy

Me : I know him

Zama : You've been dating for like 1 month an couple of weeks an you telling me that you knoq the guy? Is he worth all of what you are about to do? Come on think about all of this don't just do without thinking hard about this what I know is that no guy will ever love you like both your parwnts, not even protect you like how I've seen your parents do ☹️ don't throw that away because of a guy who can wake up tomorrow an decide that you not good enough an find somebody else ☹️ think about it

Me : I think my mind is made up

Zama : Your choice vele I was just helping another thing ask yourself why would Sane drop the call on you after dropping the bomb on her? There's too much in this story than what we see but whatever you do I support you cause you my friend after all

Zama stood up an left leaving me don't know what to do cause indeed he'll never love me like my family but guys I won't marry my family at the end I will be married to someone who's not family, who will make me his family so am leaving with Sambulo on Friday

Insert 6

Nandile

Days passed with me still thinking what to tell my brother, tomorrow is friday an I know he won't be home at night I just feel like am abandoning my family 😞 one minute it feels good to be loved by my parents an don't want anything to take them away from me, another minute am leaving them am allowing another man to take me away from them 😞 I just don't know what the hell is wrong with me but when I think about this guy I just become crazy in a way that I don't want anything to take me away from him it's like am crazy 🤔.....Today am just gonna find a way to tell Skhalo everything I know he won't allow any of this, I know that he will just lose his mind but I have to at least tell him cause he's my life an a brother that I wouldn't wanna lose I went to the kitchen I know he was awake, I left Zama sleeping cause we slept late yesterday Skhalo took us out to watch movies 😊 it was great makes me wonder if will it be this great living with Sambulo in the same house? I mean Sane is always unhappy but maybe it because they are brother's an sister

Skhalo : Look who decided to join me

He said that with a huge smile my mind raced will I see this smile ever again if I go with Sambulo? My mind was not at ease

Skhalo : Are you okay little one?

Me : Yes am okay did you sleep well?

Skhalo : not really, my girlfriend was screaming at me on the phone because I didn't call yesterday all thanks to these two monkey's I was with 😊🐒

Me : Hey!!!

I gave him a soft punch an he laughed how good hearing the one you love laugh

Me : I have something to tell you, I know it will make you angry but I wanna tell you cause you are my brother

Skhalo : Let's go to my room

Me : Okay

Skhalo : Let's see who's gonna get inside that door fast

He started to run an I ran after him pushed him aside an got inside he was so laughing his ass down

Skhalo : Cheat I will catch you

Me : I won 😊😊

Skhalo : Whatever now fix that bed

Me : Wuu never

I got inside his bed an smile he also smiled too and joined me after that he looked at me

Skhalo : Talk to me

Me : As you know that I have a boyfriend

Skhalo : Yeah is he hurting you?

Me : No chill 🖐️he's not hurting me, he wants to take me with him to Jozi

Skhalo : To visit? You know that our parents are coming so No can do sisi

Me : Not to visit

I kept quiet and he looked at me more like searching for my soul 😞

Skhalo : To do what than?

Me : Relocate

Skhalo : Ini? (what?)

Me : He wants me to relocate with him an he will find me schools there

Skhalo : Will you be living inside the school? Or you wanna tp cohabit?

Me : I will find my own flat Skhalo

Skhalo : No you won't do that Nandile you not relocating an don't even talk to me about this cause I'll beat you up cause am your big brother

Me : Bhuti you can even find me a place to stay I don't care, fine I do want to go with him but bhuti you know that I love living in Jozi I also wanted to study there an they took me but my mother denied cause she was afraid that it will cause nothing but trouble for me

Skhalo : Now? She allowed you? I won't even waste my time finding you places whereas you have a home an already studying this side

Me : Please Skhalo am begging you

Skhalo : No your boyfriend is not worth it, I would have allowed it if you said that you want me to help you find school in Jozi not help you relocate with that dickhead, Nandile what do you take me for? Do you think I will allow you to go with a person you barely know a person who have not even paid lobola for you, an you such dummy if you think that guy is good or will give you a good life, he doesn't respect you, No guy on earth who love you like truly who would just make you leave home an cohabit with him never an let me tell you this. If you go forget that you have a brother who is me cause I'll hate you an never will I forgive you

He woke up from his bed an went to take a shower an I just woke up too and fixed his bed after that I went to the kitchen to make something to eat am so frustrated, I don't want my brother to hate me I love him so much, I won't go if he hates me cause he means so much to me we've been through a lot together

he is always on my side supporting me through it all which means if he doesn't approve this that only means this is not a good idea, now he's angry at me and I know if I go he will never forgive me he will just hate me.... I ate my food but thinking hard, Zama and Skhalo joined me

Zama : Friend how are you?

Me : Am good u?

Zama : Good, I was thinking of going back to Jozi next week Monday

Skhalo : Why that early?

Zama : Well I have things to do like buying new book and all

Skhalo : But am getting paid on Wednesday so why not than?

Zama : Aww Bhuti you can send me money if you want to

Skhalo : No problem than I will send you let's hope mom and dad will be back by than so that they can see you

Zama : Let me hope so

I stood up and went to the kitchen, my brother can't even look at me I just feel like an ass

Me : Am going out for a walk will be back

Zama : Okay love will just sleep am so tired

Me : Okay

I looked at Skhalo but he was just not interested in me I just went out for a walk I mean I've got nothing to lose while walking one of Skhalo's friends parked near me

Msizi : Ndileka (Picking on her name)

Me : Mxm

Msizi : 😊 come on am joking

Me : I know 😊 so ujwang? (How are you?)

Msizi : Am good where is that friend of yours?

Me : Zama?

Msizi : Obvious mshana hau

Me : She's home with Skhalo

Msizi : Am going there want a lift?

Me : No am good

Msizi : S...

I heard a hoot when I looked behind it was Sambulo when did he get here? Is he following me?

Msizi : Who's that?

Me : Sambulo

Msizi : From where?

Me : Jeez what with the questions 😊

Msizi : Get in the car

Me : W....

I heard a hoot again an it was persisted

Me : I have to go

Msizi : I will tell Skhalo

Me : He knows

Msizi : Let us see if your mother also knows

Me : Come on Msizi don't tell mom please

Msizi : Am kidding, be careful neh

Me : Sharp

Narrated

Msizi drove away leaving Nandile standing there an Sambulo was so angry an wanted to eat her alive but he had to keep his cool

Ndile : Sambulo

Sambulo : Get in the car

Nandile got inside the car an Sambulo drove away without talking to her, she was not scared cause Sambulo haven't shown her anything to be scared off after a while they were inside Sambulo's yard an it is the first time Nandile ever set her foot there, Sambulo always had excuses for her to come to his house

Sambulo : Let's go inside

Nandile : Um where are we?

Sambulo : My house

Nandile was shocked cause she thought that maybe Sambulo was living in a normal house not the mansion she is looking at right now 😞

Sambulo : Are you coming or?

Nandile : Um yes am coming

Ndile got outside the car an they went inside the house

Sambulo : You can wait for me in the lounge am going up will be back just now

Ndile : Oh okay no worries

Nandile went to the lounge while looking around cause the place is good an never have she got inside a mansion with steps an all of that cause her home is just a normal Six rooms house

however the difference between this house and home it is that her home is homely and comfortable while thinking about all of that Sambulo came downstairs and went to sit next to Nandile

Sambulo : You good?

Ndile : Yes am good

Sambulo : Who's the guy?

Ndile : He's my brother's friend

Sambulo : Oh was he maybe threatening you?

Ndile : No of course not he was just talking

Sambulo : Mmmm you know why am asking?

Ndile : No

Sambulo : I've been hooting but you didn't come to me

Ndile : Okay he was saying that he will tell my mum

Sambulo : You don't want your mum to know?

Ndile : Obviously

Sambulo : I take it you didn't talk to them about going with me

Ndile : About that I can't go with you maybe I'll visit you if you want me to come that's all

Sambulo : Oh who changed your mind?

Ndile : I changed my own mind

Sambulo : But you said you will go with me

Ndile : Sambulo I love you, I really do love you but my family comea first

Sambulo : Even when we get married it will be like that?

Ndile : No it won't we will married lapho an you will be my family

Sambulo : It can't start that day if you can't make any sacrifices for me while we still dating

Ndile : Come on Sambulo it's not like you did any sacrifices for me we just even

Sambulo : Fine marry me

Ndile's eyes popped out cause she didn't expect that at all

Sambulo : I know we don't know each that well but I wanna be with you an I will do whatever it takes for it to happen I love you Nandile Zikhali an I will write the letter to your parents when we get to Jozi, well my family stays there so you will meet them, we can even go an buy a ring of your choice please

Sthandwa sam just marry me an relocate with me am not tryna buy you okay I just wanna be with you

Ndile : Um can I think about all of this

Sambulo : Um... **clear throat** yeah why not you can think about it, so can I make you something to eat

Ndile : Yeah you can, I can sit with you in the kitchen

Sambulo : um no no don't worry relax yourself **faking a chuckled**

Ndile : Okay

Sambulo : Yeah am coming just now okay

Sambulo stood up an went to the kitchen he was so angry an whether she likes it or not they are going to Jozi he loves her so much to let her go

Sambulo : I have to think of a plan 😞

All along Nandile was thinking of Sambulo's proposal I mean it seems like the guy only just want to go with him so he will do

whatever it takes to take her away so she's starting to think otherwise she sent Skhalo an Sms

Ndile : We need to talk

After 5 minutes Skhalo answered back

Skhalo : Meet me at the shop in 5

Ndile : Okay

Ndile stood up and tried to run away without being noticed but Sambulo was already back

Sambulo : Going somewhere?

Ndile : Um No I wanted the toilet

Sambulo : Oh can we eat first than we will go

Ndile : Actually my bro....

Sambulo : AM SO TIRED OF YOU TELLING ME ABOUT YOUR BROTHER, YOUR FRIEND OR WHATEVER THE HELL YOUR

FAMILY IS DOING, WE TOGETHER NOW HAVE YOU EVER HEARD ME TALKING ABOUT MY DAMN FAMILY WHEN AM WITH YOU?



Ndile was so shocked and scared because she had never seen this side of Sambulo, Sambulo calmed himself down and remembered that he was not supposed to lose temper

Sambulo : Am sorry I guess am jealous of you and I wanna spend this moment with you

Ndile : Um....

Sambulo : I love you

Ndile : I...

Sambulo : Shhh you don't have to say it

He hugged Ndile and she felt so scared like he's gonna beat her up as for Sambulo he was beating himself up he was not supposed to scream like that now the chances of them are slim he will have to up his game

Insert 7

Narrated

Nandile seated down and ate what was given to her although she was not too comfortable because of the way he behaved just now, Sambulo was just staring at her with guilt cause he was not suppose to shout like that

Sambulo : Am sorry I know I shouldn't have shouted like that just that I lose my cool when I don't get what I want however am prepared to just lose this time around

Ndile : Not that you losing just that I feel like it will be great if I visit you

Sambulo : No problem at all you can visit me, Can we eat together

Ndile : Ye...yes we can

Sambulo : I'll never hurt you am sorry I made you feel uneasy



Ndile : No it's okay, Babe I really need to get going

Sambulo : Okay so will I see you tomorrow morning cause in the afternoon am going

Ndile : Yes no problem

Sambulo : Okay let's go I will give you a lift

Ndile : Thank you so much

Sambulo took Ndile by hand and they went to the car, Ndile was so sad that he's leaving her this side however she's just glad that they understood each other so after a while Ndile got out of the car, she first gave Sambulo a baby kiss after that she went away leaving Sambulo fuming so he called Sane who answered on the third ring

Sane : Sam

Sambulo : I need a favour

Sane : What could that be?

Sambulo : Sis I need you to talk with Ndile for me she doesn't want to come with me to Jozi

Sane : I don't want to involve myself in your issues

Sambulo : Sane

Sane : No Sam am tired of all this, fix your problems I can't always be your puppet

Sambulo : You know I can come there?

Sane : Fine... FINE 😞 I'll talk to her

Sambulo : That's my girl now be fast am leaving tomorrow

Sane : Um okay

Sambulo : Sharp

Sambulo hung up his phone an drove away

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Nandile was in the shop an she found her brother waiting for her

Ndile : Can I sit?

Skhalo : Yes you can sit Babey

Ndile sat across her brother

Ndile : Am sorry I didn't mean to make you angry in the morning

Skhalo : It's okay I forgive you, I was thinking maybe you can go with Zama next week and then come back when schools open

Ndile : Really?

Skhalo : Yes you can check where is this jerk living and then come back I don't want you falling pregnant and all that bullshit

Ndile : No don't worry yourself I won't

Skhalo : Another thing I got a call from Mum saying that there has been a delay they might be coming back next month

Ndile : Kant what's wrong? I mean they are hiding something from us

Skhalo : Thought as much but all they said is don't worry we are good

Ndile : Let me hope everything is well with them

Skhalo : Me too

Ndile : Where is Zama?

Skhalo : With Msizi you know them

Ndile : Still dating?

Skhalo : I don't know an I don't even want to know

Ndile : Why?

Skhalo : Because am her older brother an he is my friend so it's awkward

Ndile : Have you gotten over that stupid crush?

Skhalo : Just made peace with it that we won't be able to date

Ndile : Good to know cause believe it would have ended badly

Nandile's phone rang an it was Sane so she first ignored it

Skhalo : Answer your phone

Ndile : It's Sane am just not in the mood to talk to her

Skhalo : What did she do?

Ndile : Hung up her phone on me

The phone rang again so she decided to pick it up

Ndile : Hello

Sane : Hey Baby how are you?

Ndile : Not bad you?

Sane : Good I just wanted to apologise for hanging up the call on you, just that am tired of my brother always wanting things to go his way, however all in all he needs you an he loves you so much to leave you behind

Ndile : We talked an he understood that I will only visit him

Sane : He was okay with that?

Ndile : Yes

Sane : No he wants you both to go together an stay together

Ndile : No I can't

Sane : Come on bitch

Ndile kept quiet cause she was amazed she just called her a bitch, an that statement wasn't a joke like the other times

Sane : Am joking 😊

Ndile : Um I have to go

Sane : Okay Am sorry I was joking

Ndile : It's okay I really must go

Sane : Okay I love you

Ndile hung up her phone as for Sane she didn't care how Ndile took the comment cause she's just tired of being the one to always talk an grovel for Sambulo all the time 😊

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Nandile

Days passed, Sambulo has already left although it was hard but he was just happy that I will be visiting him earlier than he thought, Today we are going to Jozi with Zama cause apparently she had things to do before school opens so that made me happy cause I will see my boyfriend, Skhalo even told me again to don't come back pregnant cause he will kill me 😞 he even told me that he will sell me to his boss so that he kills me an I used to laugh I know that he do illegal stuff but I don't care cause I know in all of that he will never hurt me not like

that, my bags are already packed cause our plane will leave in about an hour,Zama is busy with Msizi for the last time well my brother used to crush on Zama but my mother told him that he can't date Zama cause they are family it was so hard at first cause in all honesty we not family just that my friend is in need of a family so we just became one

Advertisement

I always wonder if that crush or love is really gone cause they just don't sit in the same house or room for a longest time I even suspect that Zama also have a thing for my brother but I won't ask cause I don't wanna seem like a perv who loves news but it will make me happy if she is at least my brother's feeling won't be the only one's going in veins 😊

Skhalo : Ready to go?

Me : Yes

Skhalo : Let me take my car keys than we will go, zama is waiting for you outside with Msizi

Me : Oh okay am coming just now

I turned around an looked at my room am gonna misd it for these couple of days while am away after that I took my bags

an walked out..... We drove away with these two love birds busy laughing at the back of the car when I looked at my brother I could see that this irritated him but he kept his cool so after a while we were in the plane with Zama, am so gonna miss my crazy brother

Zama : You'll miss him?

Me : Yes

Zama : I'll miss him too, you know living in res is not so funny cause you miss home every chance you get

Me : Who you miss the most? Msizi?

Zama : Jeez No 😊 that one is for only fun nothing more 😊

Me : Oh my God 😊 ain't you in love with him?

Zama : No am not

Me : Will you ever be in love Zama I mean even in school you were busy with boys but not in love

Zama : Well I will fall in love one day so how about you?

Me : What about me?

Zama : How are you feeling I mean you be seeing your boyfriend

Me : So happy

Zama : Will you start where am living? I mean Skhalo found me a flat cause "Res is so dangerous for a girl like you "

Me : He's is being protective

Zama : Which is cute shame

Me : Yeah I know he's incredible

Zama : Yeah 😊

Time passed an we were in Jozi in No time so we found an uber that will take us to where Zama is living, after like an hour we were in her flat am so tired just feel like sleeping an waking up tomorrow

Me : So tired

Zama : I know hey.... You can go an bath than sleep will wake you up later to eat cause I'll order something for us

Me : Okay where is my room

Zama directed me so I went to the room and went to bath after that I rested on my bed, I took my phone and called Skhalo first who answered immediately

Skhalo : Little one 😊

Me : Hey bhuti we are safe

Skhalo : Was so waiting for this call

Me : I was bathing so that's why am calling you now cause am resting

Skhalo : Okay little one take care of yourself for me I love you will see you after 1 week

Me : Yes

Skhalo : Don't fall pregnant little one please

Me : Am not even doing anything so don't worry I won't

Skhalo : Okay, um how is Zama?

Me : She's good

Skhalo : That's good I have to go call you later

Me : I love you

Skhalo : I love you too little one 😊👉

I hung up my phone and scroll down looking for Sambulo's number cause I want to tell him that I am around now, he answered the call on a third ring 😊

Sambulo : Babe

Me : Um hey love

Sambulo : Are you okay?

Me : Yes I am good you?

Sambulo : Now that I hear your voice I am good

Me : Um I am here

Sambulo : Here where? 😊

Me : Jozi

I heard the line going dead I mean I even thought he dropped the call on me

Me : Baby

Sambulo : I thought I heard you saying you in Jozi

Me : Yes I arrived today

Sambulo : You mean to tell me that I will see you?

Me : Yes

Sambulo : Wow am so happy Babe thank you very much

Me : It a pleasure I mean I missed you so much

Sambulo : You will see me... Where are you staying?

Me : Am staying with Zama

Sambulo : In res?

Me : No it a flat

Sambulo : You can stay with me

I don't think that a good idea I mean what if I fall pregnant cause you'll never know what will happen if you sleep with a boy, well am not experienced but I know people like Sambulo are not the type you can easily say No am not ready he's so persuading if he wants something I nearly ran away from home because of him

Sambulo : Ndile are you still there?

Me : Yes I don't think that's a good idea

Sambulo : Why?

A change in his voice is what am hearing right now 😞

Me : You a guy

Sambulo : Your guy right?

Me : Um yes

Sambulo : So you will live with me for just a time being, what if your friend get visited by other guys? What will happen then? I can't risk it am coming right now send me the location

Me : Sa....

Sambulo : Now Nandile Now!!

Aibo what is this? I will not enjoy this visit if he's gonna act like this jerk, I sent him my location although Zama was not so happy about this cause am suppose to sleep in the flat for today, she's just worried at what if Skhalo calls an wants to speak with me or worse call me an wants to speak with Zama what will happen than, we prayed for the best after like 30 minutes he was waiting for me outside so I went to him with my bag he hugged me an opened the door for me so much for

being a jerk 😊😞 he drove away an it was all silent in the car I was so angry at him for being an ass, after like another 30 minutes we entered her house to be quite honest I don't even have time to admire this house cause this guy is so controlling 😞

Sam : You good?

I kept quiet until we entered inside the house he pulled me to him an kissed my forehead

Sam : Babe talk to me

I wiggled myself from him an I saw that he became upset but I don't care

Me : This is unfair Sambulo

Sam : What's unfair?

Me : You not listening to me when am telling you that I don't want to be in this house today

Sam : Excuse me

Me : Yes Sambulo I don't want you to control me I wanna make my own decisions

Sam : Your own decisions? You wanted to sleep in a flat? What if boys came there? You wanted them to see you an ask you out while am here in Jozi with a huge house for you to stay 🤔

Me : I don't care about this house what I care about is you being controlling I don't like that

Sam : Tough cause am like this an you can't change that

Me : Bullshit

Sam : What?

He looked at me with anger an it like if I repeat what I just said he will do something bad but am angry to be thinking all of that, am angry cause I don't want this to repeat itself if I let him now he will control me over an over again

Me : I SAID BULLSHIT 😡

He raised his hand in a form of slapping me I felt like pee is near cause never in my life have I been slapped he calmed himself

Sam : Never again will I hear you say BULLSHIT IN THIS HOUSE!!! cause next time I will raise this hand an it will land in your stupid face nx!!! IT YOUR FIRST DAY HERE AN ALREADY YOU FIGHTING ME BECAUSE YOU WANT BOYS TO NOTICE YOU!! YOU NOT GONNA LIVE IN THAT FLAT OVER MY DEAD BODY NOW GO UPSTAIRS AN DO WHAT EVER THE SHIT YOU WANT TO DO AN DON'T DARE ME!! 😞😞

Right now I saw an image I never thought I'll see in Sambulo, it makes me question all the things I thought about him..

Insert 8

Nandile

I woke up in the morning feeling so defeated I mean my first night in Jo'burg an everything is just not good in this house 😞 I heard my door opening an I knew that Sambulo decided to embrace me with his presence

Sambulo : Nandile

Me : Hey

Sambulo : Can I sit?

Me : Yeah

He sat on the couch that was in the corner of this room he gave me yesterday

Sambulo : Am sorry

Me : You sorry?

Sambulo : Yes I know I was wrong Baby an I don't think what I did is good an I don't even think it made you happy, am not abusive just that I love to claim what's mine, I know that maybe you will look at me in a different way but I promise you I will never lay my hands on you

Me : I don't believe you Sambulo you nearly slapped me 😞

Sambulo : I know Baby which is why am apologising...I will go for counselling I don't wanna lose you please forgive me I wronged you

Me : Can I have time to myself Sambulo, I wanna think about everything I mean I came here to visit you thinking that everything will be okay an all but now I just don't know

Sambulo : Visit?

Me : Yes

Sambulo : I thought you here to stay

Me : Yooo aike I don't have time for this

I stood up from my bed an went to have a cold shower, what is this man? Why is he this stubborn or maybe he's just making me a fool, making me think that he's all innocent in all of this 😞 I do love him but am afraid that maybe he's not what I think he is

Narrated

Sambulo was like a ticking bomb because of Nandile's behaviour but he didn't want to show his true colors of not accepting defeat so he took his phone and called his therapist who answered immediately

Him : Mr Ndlela

Sam : Mr Gazi can we meet today let's say my house

Him : It been a while

Sam : I think I had a break down yesterday so I just wanna talk about it

Him : No problem when do you want me to come?

Sambulo : I want you to come today if it possible for you to squeeze me in your schedule

Him : I will see what I can do

Sambulo : Thank you please call me if you will be available so that I cancel my plans

Him : Will let you know

Sam : Thanks you Mr Gazi

Him : No problem at all

Sambulo hung up his call well he have anger problems an ends up abusing the people close to his heart, well he does love Nandile but anger is also on the way of his happiness

Ndile : Are you really going for counselling

Sambulo : Yeah

She said that coming from the bathroom, she overhead Sambulo talking on the phone an she couldn't help wonder what seems to be the problem with Sambulo

Ndile : What's wrong with you? Like why are you always angry

Sambulo : I don't know, I guess growing up seeing your family always angry an treating people badly just because they were scary back than, everyone treated them with respect, so I guess I adapted that life

Ndile : Are you abusive?

Sambulo : Yeah very abusive but I try Ndile, the more I try is the more I think I lose

Ndile : Have you been in a longest relationship? Like without beating your partner

Sambulo : No

Ndile : So what make ours different cause I won't settle for less, Sambulo I love you so much but I can't be with someone who will beat me up like every time if he is angry

Sambulo : I'll change fine they always say that but I want you to help me, I've been a jerk all my life but with you it all different I love you an I wanna be with you

Sambulo was speaking the truth he wanted to try an love Ndile but what scared him is that what if he loves her an ends being the one heart broken cause also girls can cheat not only boys are dogs but also girls they are trouble sometimes

Ndile : Am afraid

Sambulo : I know believe me I know that's why am doing this for us you can join our session

Ndile : fine I will join

Sambulo : Thank you

Ndile : As long as you won't be controlling I hate that

Sambulo : Never again I promise

Ndile : No don't promise Sambulo just do it

Sambulo : Fine so tell me when are you going?

Ndile : Friday

Sambulo : This Friday?

Ndile : No the following

Sambulo : Oh by than we would have had more fun

Ndile : Let me hope it will be fun 😊

Sambulo : Oh Embrace yourself Miss Zikhali cause I will sweep you off your feets 😊

Ndile : So happy to hear that 😊

✘

✘

✘

✘

✘

1 week Later

Thursday

Nandile

Life has been great, Sambulo has been treating me like a queen, I had time to go and visit Zama we spent most of the time together if Sambulo goes to work

Advertisement

Life has never been better it may be days but it feels like I could live like this but reality kicked in tomorrow am going home, however Sambulo said he has a surprise for me so now am getting ready for this surprise 😊 no lie I was so scared that one of these days he will beat me up but he didn't you know he's so loving and am so lucky to have him at least he did give me a piece of himself when he told me about his family little things counts 😊 my phone rang and it's my brother everyday he calls me

Me : Bro

Skhalo : I miss you can't wait for you to come home tomorrow

Me : I can't wait too bhutii

Skhalo : I will be waiting for you at the airport

Me : What a wonderful brother I have in my life

Skhalo : It's good cause you can see that you luck

Me : True am so luck 😊 I love you but I have to go

Skhalo : Am the one who called you not the other way around

Me : Jeez save the airtime for tomorrow

Skhalo : Don't worry about that it Month End

Me : How can I forget that Jesus 😊 I want my share half of your salary

Skhalo : Yahlanya (you crazy)

Me : 😊

Skhalo : Let me leave you bye 😊

Me : Run am coming tomorrow I will bankrupt you

Skhalo : Whatever I love you too little one

He hung up his phone while laughing leaving me smiling, I will always be his little one I mean now am old I will soon be turning 17 so am old 😊.....I went downstairs an was met by flowers

fresh one's to be exact I just smiled cause Sambulo have his thing of spoiling me when he wants to

Sambulo : Come this side Babe

I walked to the kitchen an found him busy making breakfast well he doesn't how to make one but he's a using a cooking book for instructions an ingredients 😊 I find this amusing I will miss his crazy ass

Sambulo : Hey sleepy head come an kiss

I went to him an he baby kissed me an carried on doing what he was doing

Sambulo : Did you sleep well?

Me : Yes I did Babe you?

Sambulo : Not bad just that I wish you were close to me

Well we have not reached that stage of sharing the same bed maybe when am coming back we will, am just not ready 😞

Sambulo : I have something for you check on that envelope

I looked at the white envelope I wondered what is inside it, I opened it an got the shock of my life 😞

Me : What is this?

Sambulo : University

Me : Univ... What do you mean?

Sambulo : You got accepted at UJ

Me : What?

Sambulo : This my lady states that you have been selected to join the UJ university an I know it has always been you dream to study there so I made some changes for you like I know I was controlling an all of that, I was jealous an selfish that I just thought of myself only so now I wanna make it up to you by doing this you can stay at res no problem I just wanted to do something good for you

Me : Sam...

Sambulo : Come on this not about me but definitely about you, Babe am proud of you an you passed your grades perfectly which is why I don't see a reason for you to don't study here, your mom may be scared that you will lose focus but am here I will make sure that you study an become what you always dreamed of becoming, your brother will be proud of you one day

Me : They will be angry Sambulo, it not that easy

Sambulo : I'll make it easy for you just write a msg to your brother an throw away the Sim Card in that way they will know that you wanted to follow your dreams

Me : Am scared, believe am tempted but I don't wanna lose my brother

Sambulo : You have me Babe I will never make you lose your brother I'll make sure that you regain his love again one day

Me : He's looking forward to see me tomorrow

Sambulo : A walk to success needs sacrifices I want you to follow your dream an be successful all other things will follow believe me you will make them proud they'll love you again

This sounds tempting but what about my family I can't just turn back on them now

Me : Can I go an see Zama please

Sambulo : Yes but you need to eat first

Me : No am not hungry

Sambulo : Fine let's go

Me : I will travel alone I just need air

Sambulo : Don't push me away fine you can go back home no worries I can just tear this letter

Me : No don't I need to talk to someone

Sambulo : Babe I don't want anything to make us fight, I can just fix this but tearing this letter an you can go home tomorrow no problem at all I can visit you like every month end I mean I do have a house that side 😊

Me : Can I think about it don't tear it

Sambulo : Are you sure?

Me : You should be groveling I mean you want me to stay

Sambulo : Yeah I do want you to stay cause it will make me happy, however right now I want you to be happy it not about me

Me : Yeah I will see you

Sambulo : I love you

Me : Me more

Sambulo : 😊

I just walked away with a heavy heart an am indecisive on what to do I mean I always wanted to study at UJ now the opportunity presented itself but I can't take it, what will my family say that I turned my back on them like how? Why? I was happy at home but I can also be happy this side, am on my way to where Zama is living I don't know but my mind is occupied by a lot of things

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

After a while I was in Zama's door knocking so she let me in after like 2 minutes

Me : Were you sleeping?

Zama : Yes come in babe

Me : Thank you

We went to her room an I threw myself in her bed

Zama : What's wrong?

Me : Take

I gave her the envelope an she opened it after that she jumped like literally danced because of joy I think

Zama : You got accepted oh my world this calls for celebration

Me : I don't think so

Zama : Why?

Me : My family

Zama : You can talk to them

Me : They won't agree

Zama : Babe this is a huge break through an it a great school

Me : Skhalo

Zama : Talk to him he'll understand

Me : It would have been great if I didn't start by asking to relocate with a guy

Zama : Oh

Zama was speechless more like thinking what she will say next

Zama : He did this for you?

Me : Who? Zama : Boyfie?

Me : Yeah

Zama : He loves you this much I mean you always wanted to study at UJ Me : Yeah

Zama : Just follow your heart I know you wanna make mommy an daddy proud but this is huge very huge

Me : You think so?

Zama : Yes Babe I know this came in a wrong way like a guy presented it to you but it a huge achievement

Me : Sambulo said I must write a message an send it to my brother after that throw away the Sim Card

Zama : No don't do that, just write a message than ignore their calls am sure when you visit them during the holidays they will be happy to see you

Me : You think so

Zama : I know they will be angry cause they parents but they'll be proud as long as you will take care of yourself

Me : Am scared like am just afraid what if something bad happens to me Zama : Am here for you

Me : Zama Zama : Nandile

Me : This is a new start for me

Zama : Your man loves you an to make this huge break for you makes me be proud of him I mean like he's asking for nothing in return he just loves you

Me : Let me hope this is the best choice I take

This was a life I chose just because of a guy I thought it will be a walk in the park little did I know that I have revealed the devil, satan an the witch of all witchies 😞💔😞 embrace it cause it about to be lit...

Insert 9

Narrated

Nandile asked Zama to call Skhalo on her behalf and Zama was compensating alone on wanting to call Skhalo but she was afraid cause Skhalo can be angry and snap when wanting to...

Zama : Oh here goes my chance

Zama took her phone and called Skhalo who answered on the third ring

Skhalo : Zama

Zama :

Skhalo : Are you there?

Zama : Um **clear throats** am here Skhalo how are you?

Skhalo : Am good how are you?

Zama : Not bad we need to talk Skhalo

Skhalo : About what?

Zama : It about Ndile

Skhalo was trying all his best to don't call Zama "Babe or My love" cause his crush for her is still there an nothing can change that

Skhalo : Am listening

Zama : Well she got accepted in UJ

Skhalo : So?

Zama : She asked me If I should call you an tell you that she will be not coming back an Sk...

Skhalo : WHAT? 😞

Zama : I know that you are upset or rather confused bu...

Skhalo : Tell Ndile that I want her home today, I mean am waiting for at the airport can I talk to her?

Skhalo felt like his breath was leaving him, he loves his sister an this is really breaking his heart

Zama : I'll ask her to call you

Skhalo : Don't worry I'll call her

Zama : Um Skhalo I want you to know that am here if you need to talk

Skhalo : Sure

Skhalo dropped the call on Zama and called Ndile who didn't answer at first but after some time she did although she was so scared cause she knew that her brother will not agree to this

Ndile : My brother 😊

Skhalo : How far are you?

Ndile : Ab...

Skhalo : NO NO NDILE DON'T DO THIS TO ME!!

people were looking at him because of his shouting

Skhalo : NIJONGE NTON!!! 😞 (What are you looking at?) Baby please don't do this to me, to us, to our parents please little one I love you and I can't let you go like that

Ndile : Skhalo this is a good opportunity for me an I can't let it pass me

Skhalo : What about our agreement? An who gave you the letter?

Ndile : Samb....

Skhalo : Rubbish that jerk!! Can't you see that he wants you to leave your Family an be with him

Ndile : He's doing this for my future Skhalo

Skhalo : Future? FUTURE NANDILE! MY MOTHER SACRIFICED EVERYTHING FOR US AN YOU LEAVE US LIKE THIS? 😞😞 Nandile you will come home if you know what good for you 😞

Skhalo felt like he's suffocating an worse he can't go to Jozi because he's hiding since the job he's doing requires him to do so

Skhalo : Baby please 😞😞 am begging you

Ndile : I love you Skhalo but I have to do this, for me an you'll be proud one day take care of yourself

Skhalo : Than come home

Ndile : I can't

Skhalo : I will give you all the money you need ,Little one don't do this to me what will I tell our parents?

Ndile : I just need your blessings Skhalo

Skhalo : Not because of a boy 😞 am waiting for you at the airport I need you home please sis wam, what if that man kills you I will never forgive myself please little one do it for your brother please 😞

Ndile : I love you

Skhalo : I love you, I do Ndile kaMama I will provide everything for you

Advertisement

fine you will study next semester but for now come home

Ndile : I can't

Skhalo : Little One listen my mother sacrificed every thing for us, she wanted us to have a good life together an you let a man come between us? Ndile my father is s..... Our father will need when they are back please at least be here when they come back please Zikhali

Ndile : I know my parents won't let me

Skhalo : I will speak to them please

Ndile : Am sorry but I can't I love you

Skhalo : Nd.... **pup pup*** No No Ndile NDILEEEEEEE 😞😞😞

He kneeled down because he was so sad how could Ndile do this? Are they not worth it? Oh God 😞😞😞 Ndile hung up his phone an took out the sim card while crying an threw it away like how Sambulo suggested, Skhalo didn't know what to do cause he's breaking what will he tell their mother? What will he tell their father? He's so heart broken 💔

Nandile

I don't know if what I did is a good idea but I hope that one day they will realise that I had to sacrifice for my dreams, Sambulo came downstairs smiling

Sambulo : MaZikhali

Me : Hey 😊

Sambulo : So when are you leaving?

Me : Am not leaving

Sambulo : What?

Me : I accept the opportunity

Sambulo was so happy an he swinged me around while kissing me I giggled like a small kid I mean am in love

Sambulo : Thank you I mean for following your dreams 😊

Me : Yeah I know so Res?

Sambulo : Um next month

Me : No problem

Sambulo : So will you cook for me?

Me : Obviously 😊😁

Sambulo : I love you

Me : More Me 😊

I know that it hasn't been long knowing this man in front of me but I know that he wishes nothing but the best for me an my life starts now

Me : So Babe can I ask?

Sam : Sure

Me : What work do you do?

Sam : Am trafficking drugs

Me : 🤔

What is this guy saying to me? Aibo

Sam : Jesus 😄😄 am joking Babe you should see your face right now

Me : Mxm

Sam : Am a businessman

Me : 😊 I don't care anymore how can you scare me like that

Sam : Babe am s....

Me : Leave me alone

I mean how can he joke like that? I almost had a heart attack 😨
but all in all am happy here with him ♥

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

1 Month Later

Nandile

Life has been amazing well I do miss my parents and my brother but you know that I have to do what I have to do to have my dreams come true, Sambulo has been so loving an he takes a good care of me well so you must know am not longer a virgin, I know it early but I just felt like he's doing so much for me an am giving him less of me... Lately he's been busy with work an I have to find a place to stay cause I can't cohabit it's not my style phela I don't want to seem like am a girl who's dating a blesser of some sort 😊 so am going to school cause I have an early class I did my hygiene after a while I wore my clothes the comfortable one's cause I just don't feel like wearing short things it feels like people can see that am no longer a virgin 😊 I went downstairs to be met by Sambulo an a man I don't know

Me : Um Hey

Sambulo : Sure.... So as I was say.... Excuse me Mzi

He stood up an came to me cause I just felt like is he for real?

"Sure " like am his buddy or something 😊

Me : Sure?

Sambulo : Am sorry just that our meeting is more serious

Me : Oh

He baby kissed me an after that he looked at me more like judging me

Sambulo : What are you wearing?

Me : Tracksuit

Sambulo : Why?

Me : Class an I have to look for a flat

Sambulo : Flat?

Me : Yeah I can't live with you anymore an you promised me that we will stay together for just 1 month an.....

He pushed me to the kitchen with frustration cause his friend is right in the lounge where we were talking

Sambulo : You not going anywhere Ndile

Me : No Sambulo that's not our agreement

Sambulo : I can take care of you

Me : I wanna have my own flat

Sambulo : So that you can cheat? You not getting any flat

Me : Sa....

Sambulo : End of discussion now go upstairs an change this rubbish you wearing I will not have a granny of a girlfriend

He walked away leaving me speechless, okay what just happened I will look for this flat whether he likes it or not I took my bag while on the door he called out

Sambulo : Don't even think about it I don't wanna be angry
Nandile go an change

I quickly went upstairs an changed angrily after sometime I
walked out leaving them still talking sometimes I feel like
Sambulo is too much...The driver drove me to school the class
started after that I went looking for a flat with a girl I study
with, well we not friends but just study buddies

Me : which flat you think is good?

Lihle : My flat 😊

Me : I will not be your room mate

Lihle : Jeez why?

Me : Because I wanna live alone I have a boyfriend who'll visit
me Lihle : I'll go away if he comes

Me : Still No Lihle : Think about it less rent money to pay

Me : Let me talk to Sambulo about it

Lihle : Okay no worries Me : I have to go

My phone was ringing continuously an I know Sambulo wants
to ask where am I? So am just ignoring him, me an the driver

went to the mall and bought some stuff after like later we went back home and the house was so dark for my likings so I got inside and switched on the light within a blink of an eye I felt a heavy bang on my face it felt like an electric shock that's when I realised I've been slapped I look at Sambulo while holding my cheek Sambulo : Where were you?

Me : Did you just slap me?

Sambulo : If you don't answer me right now I will not just slap you don't make me angry

Me : I was looking for a flat 😞

Sambulo : A FLAT? 😞 didn't I tell you to never mind that

Me : Sam....

Sambulo : SHUT UP!!! 😞 or I will slap you once again

Me : S....

Sambulo : You don't listen that's the problem 😞 I told you in the morning to change and you wanted to not listen to me!! Am the man of this house I made all of this possible and I can take it all away don't test me

Me : 😞 Sambulo you slapped me

Sambulo : And I will do it again if you don't listen 😞

I looked at this monster in front of me who is this man? I mean he promised me that he will never hurt me now he slaps me? I just cried out loud thinking about this? Did I choose right by leaving my family behind he just hugged me I was so terrified I tried to wiggle myself but he was giving me no justice

Sam : Am so sorry yo... You made me angry an when am angry I just lose it Babey I told you that I don't want you to look for a place but you went behind my back am so sorry

Me : Sambulo you slapped me 🤔🤔 you said you will never hurt me

Sambulo : Ndile you made me like this I want you to listen when I tell you something don't go behind my back I love you

Me : Please let me go

Sambulo : No I won't let you go please don't leave me it will never happen again I promise you please just one last chance please

He won't change I know, I love him so much but he's a monster I just cried cause what if he will keep on doing this all the days of my life?

Insert 10

Nandile

It been two days after the whole incident an Sambulo has been apologising but I don't want to hear it, well today am leaving his place an will be staying with Lihle, an I will have to find a job cause I can't always depend on Sambulo, since he showed me who he really is... I wish I could go back home I miss my brother an my parents I don't even know what will they say if I were to go back home...I took my phone an called Zama who answered on a third ring

Zama : My better half

Me : Hi can we meet an talk?

Zama : Well am home

Me : Ohh I forgot so how's everyone?

Zama : Well Skhalo is good

Zama went home because Skhalo called for her I guess for giving her the money, well Skhalo is a good person he loves to

spoil his sisters an he loves to take care of us an I messed all that up

Me : My parents?

Zama : They not back as yet

Me : Is everything okay?

Zama : I think you should call mama an find out

Me : You know I can't

Zama : Nandile they are your parents 😬

Me : I know am just ashame that I left home an I shouldn't have

Zama : Come back

Me : No

Zama : Nandile your brother is so devastated an am sure he'll be happy to see you I know that I said you must follow your dreams but if you not happy come back home your brother needs you

I hung up my phone with tears running down my cheeks 😞 I took my bags an went downstairs found Sambulo drinking

some water an pills 😊 am not doing this with him I tried to walk out but he stopped me

Sambulo : Please don't go I'll change well.....

A knock came through an I looked at him cause he was blocking my way so he went to open the door

Sambulo : Who are you?

Person : Not sure if am in the right place am looking for Nandile

Sambulo : Ndile someone is here for you

I went to the door an found Lihle looking so ever beautiful I just hugged her

Lihle : Am here we can go

Sambulo : Ndile can we talk please

Me : Let's go Lihle

Sambulo : Fine I'll tell you everything about myself please don't go not like this

Me : Sambulo I can't do this with you

Sambulo : Do you mind can I have a minute with her

Lihle : Fine

Narrated

Lihle walked away leaving Sambulo and Nandile looking at each other like the earth has been dropped on their shoulders

Sambulo : I know am an abuser and I won't deny that Baby cause I am, I love you I don't know if you believe me or not cause what happened was a mistake I will never hurt you again please at least say you love me too.... You can go but love me too

He was tearing and his heart was so heavy well he did love Nandile but his inside is rotten and he's used to abusing girls but with Nandile it's different he do want to hurt her but in the process he ends up hurting himself as for Nandile she did love

Sambulo but she's scared that if she stay more damage will happen to her next time it will be more than a slap 💔

Ndile : I can't

Nandile left him right there an he just cried an took a vase that was on the table smashed it on the wall 💔 so he took his phone an called one of his guys who answered on the fourth ring

Guy : Boss

Sambulo : I want you to find me a girl

Guy : Name?

Sambulo : Nandile Zikhali I want her in the warehouse

Guy : Your girlfriend?

Sambulo : Yeah am giving you 1 hour

Guy : On it boss

Sambulo went upstairs an took his gun while putting some sneakers cause he's so adamant that one way or the other he will come back with his girlfriend

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Nandile didn't even reach the flat cause she was snatched away by the guy that was sent by Sambulo....she was drugged an was tied on the chair with Sambulo watching her with tears in his eyes

Guy : Boss

Sambulo : Sphiwe you can leave us

Sphiwe : If you need anything call me

Sambulo : I will

Sphiwe walked out an Sambulo stood up took the bucket which is full of cold water an poured it at Nandile who woke up an gasped for air while coughing

Sambulo : Wakey Wakey

Nandile's eyes popped out cause she was not expecting this an she even can't remember how she got her

Ndile : Sam... What's happening why am I tied on the chair like this?

Sambulo : I can't let you go even if I try it just hurts I've never felt something like this, I dated different girls but felt nothing like this I can't live without you Nandile

Ndile : Please Sambulo untie me

Sambulo : Am not stupid Ndile, you want me to untie you so that you can just leave me is that what you want

Ndile : No 🤨 I won't leave

Sambulo : So when you look at Sambulo you just see a stupid jerk who's brainless you know if you keep on selling me dreams I'll blow your brain out with this gun 😬

He took out his gun an placed in on the table an Nandile felt like dying right there cause she never thought that a boyfriend of few weeks will do this! How could love blind her so much that she left home because of this guy an it hasn't been long but now the guy wants to kill her 😬😬💔

Ndile : Talk to me

Sambulo : So now you wanna talk?

Ndile : Sa....

Sambulo : SHUT UP!!! I DO THE TALKING NOW

Ndile : 🤔

Sambulo : I've trying to explain myself to you an you pushed me away just because of your stupid friend an I told you that I hate being pushed away I hate not being in control of everything but No you had to anger me, Nandile I do... I... I don't usually do this bu..b.. But you changing me an for what? FOR YOU TO ALWAYS ARGUE WITH ME LIKE AM NOT THE ONE WHO MADE YOUR STUPID LIFE BE LIKE THIS... AM THE ONE WHO SUGGESTED THAT YOU COME THIS SIDE, AM THE ONE WHO GOT YOU SPACE IN UJ 🤔 an now the bitch decides to just leave me cause am abusing her right? So now I'll show you who am I 🤔 an when am done with you no man but me only me will come near you, I want you to feel me in your body like am tattoo I want you to be haunted by me cause I love you an I can't imagine my life without you 🤔💔

He paced up and down looking at Nandile who was so scared and crying that tore his heart apart

Sambulo : Okay okay I will untie you after that we will go to my house like nothing happened cause if you misbehave I will just kill you no questions asked ☹️

Nandile nodded cause she will do whatever it takes to get out of this place and to get out of Sambulo's life for good, Sambulo took his gun and went close to Nandile he untied her

Sam : Stand up we leaving

Ndile : Okay

Sam : If you try to run away oh oh it's rest in peace to you cause my guys are outside they will not hesitate to kill you ☹️ one bullet in your skull and you dead

Nandile just kept quiet and they walked together to the car.....after a while they were inside Sambulo's house

Ndile : I thought that with you I'll be free Sambulo I didn't know that am signing my death warrant

Sam : Don't say that Babe you free you can do whatever you want but don't leave me in the process

Ndile : I was not leaving you Sambulo I was actually changing places

Sam : Changing places? You were not talking to me Ndile what if I also did the same brought girls in this house cause I don't care about your feelings? How would you have felt? Sad right cause you love me an you don't wanna live without it's the same I felt betrayed fine am the one who said you will go an stay in a flat an I was busy buying you one instead of you to just listen to me you decide to go behind my back

Ndile : How was I suppose to know that you will buy one for me?

Sam : There's something called a surprise Ndile

Ndile : I don't want your surprises I was to go home

Sambulo : Home? DID YOU SAY HOME 😞

He slapped her so hard with the back of his hand an she fell down with blood coming out of her nose

Sam : I did whatever it takes to have you in my life an you telling me about home?

He kicked her abdomen with full force he was doing that continuously an Ndile screamed

Sam : I even mistreated my girlfriend for you not that I love the bitch but she was my girlfriend for years, she kept up with my shit of abusing her an when you came in my lifw I wanted nothing else but you an now you TELLING ME THAT YOU WANNA GO HOME DO YOU KNOW WHAT SACRIFICES I DID TO HAVE YOU HERE YOU NOT GOING ANYWHERE YOU HEAR ME?

he pulled her by the braid an she was busy screaming he didn't carw about the he took her to the room upstairs an threw her inside she fell so hard on the floor with her face kissing the floor

Ndile : Oh my God 🤔🤔🤔

Sambulo : That's how my girlfriend fell on the stairs cause she was questioning my actions so if you don't listen to me I will abuse you until you die don't test me, wake from that floor an go bath I will come back just now we are going out

With that he left her crying on the floor wishing for the earth to swallow her cause this is not what she signed up for 😞

✘

✘

✘

✘

Nandile managed to bath although her body was so painful

Advertisement

Sambulo came inside the room looking good so he helped Nandile with wearing her clothes which is something so comfty, he did her face cause he's used of doing this for his girlfriends after the kidnap

Sam : If someone asked you anything you will say that you fell okay?

Nandile nodded with tears streaming down her face

Sam : Stop crying please ☹️

Nandile wiped her tears quickly with her hands shaking from being nervous, Sambulo saw that and he took her hands

Sam : Chill calm down please

Ndile : Ok

Sam : We will come back home just now okay?..

Nandile nodded and Sambulo pulled her up then they went downstairs with Nandile struggling to walk

Sam : Come on Nandile you can't keep on walking like what will people say?

Ndile : YO.... you the cause of this

Sam : Walk

Ndile : S...

Sam : I said walk

Nandile started walking and she was making her strong and struggling because her body was so hurting, they got inside the car and drove away silently, Sambulo's phone rang and he just looked at it after that he dropped the call, Nandile knew better than to ask because who knows she might get burnt for it, he drove until they got into the mall

Ndile : Why are we in the mall?

Sam : Come I got something for you

Ndile got out of the car and walked inside the mall hand in hand

Sambulo : You see those tables?

He said pointing at the tables

Ndile : Yes

Sambulo : Go an sit there I will come back to you cause I can see that you struggling to walk an don't think of running cause you may never know who's watching 🤔

Sambulo walked away an Ndile limped an went to sit where they said she must sit, her heart was so broken cause she thought that life in Jozi will be the best but now here she is being abused by a man she thought loved her 😞 she just wanna go home, she knew that they not gonna welcome her nicely but eventually they will come around after a while she felt like someone is standing in front of her

Sane : Oh my God Ndile

Nandile's face shoot up cause it been a while

Ndile : Sane hi

Sane : Can I sit?

Ndile : Yes

Sane sat accross her an stared at her cause she can see the signs 😞

Sane : Are you good?

Ndile : Yes am good

Sane : You hiding something from me am your friend I care about you

Ndile : Um.... Everything is fine

Ndile was so scared cause what if someone is really watching her, her phone rang an it was Sambulo he answered

Ndile : ****clear throat**** Babe

Sambulo : Look up

Nandile did an she saw him standing there

Ndile : I can see you

Sambulo : Come

Ndile : Okay

Sambulo dropped the call an Nandile struggled to stand up but eventually she did

Ndile : I have to go

Sane : Call me if you get a chance

Nandile started to walk an she was limping

Sane : Nandile what happened to you?

Ndile : I fe.... Oh my God 🤔😞💔🙏

Nandile's mind raced to the day Sane was also in this situation, when Sane would come to school bruised, when Sane would always beg her to be in love with her brother, When Sane will do whatever it takes to make her brother happy ,when they will leave her at school while limping an she just cried cause indeed Sane is the girlfriend who suffered all the abuse because of her, how can she forgive herself for this? Will Sane ever forgive her for this? Sane was so hurt cause she knew this life an now another person is living it 😞 that is heart breaking..

Insert 11 ?

Nandile

All my life I've never thought that my life would be such a mess cause I chose wrongly, I blame myself for being a fool I wanna go home all of this is not me, my life was right when I didn't have a boyfriend all I had was my family especially my old brother 😊 I wish I could turn back time, being in this guy's presence anger an disgust me 😞 we were back from the mall an am resting in my bed cause my body is so painful an he's busy doing whatever I don't know in the kitchen am sick an tired of this guy an anything to make me exist his life for good I would take it cause he's sick in the head.... While in my thoughts the door opens but I don't even want to look at who's coming

Sam : Meet me downstairs an wear smart not those junks you wearing am giving you 5 minutes

He walked out leaving me stunned at what just happened 😞 is this the same guy who said he loved me? Or was it all a joke I

mean he even have a nerve to use his girlfriend to ask another girl put for him 😞 am so hurt cause Sane was suppose to tell me I mean I wouldn't have done that to her, I woke up an wore some dress even though my body is so green from all the kicking I got from this man, I limped downstairs an found a table made with roses pr whatever this is I mean is this guy serious? Doing all of this after all the ill treatment I got 😞

Sam : Look at you 😊 you looking so beautiful come an sit

He pulled me roughly cause I hitched an he didn't care as long as you do what he wants me to do, he sat across me an smiled

Sam : Your make is on point, so this is what will happen the person I wanna do business with is coming for a dinner with his sister so I want you to be nice

Me :

Sam : Am not talking alone Nandile

Me : **clears throat ** Ye... Yeah I'll be nice

Sam : Good so you my sister right? I mean like I don't wanna scare these people 😊

There it is he wants me to be his sister instead of being his girlfriend 😬

Me : Okay

Sam : Don't by any chance stand up unless I tell you too

Me : Okay

Sam : Good

A bell rang an he jumped but before moving forward he turned an watched me

Sam : Don't I mean it Nandile Don't do something that will make me drag you up those stairs an push you down them again 🤔

He walked away after that I wiped my tears away quickly an looked straight at the entrance an saw a beautiful girl like a model I felt jealous but like am in no condition to be feeling like that, after the girl in came a guy who was so intimidating an he

didn't even have a smile in his face it was like something I won't be able to explain I was so staring until I noticed that Sambulo was giving me a frown not that am interested but am just wondering how will this be a successful dinner with this guy will he even talk....enough already Nandile

Sam : Nandile this is Lerato Cele an Rato this is my younger sister

Rato : Nice tp finally meet you 😊 I mean like Sambulo is always talking about you when we meet

Me : 😊

I tried to fake a smile I mean she have that devilish smile that creeps me out it's like they know each other more than she mentions 😊

Sam : An this is Nkanyezi Cele

Nkanyezi what a nice name for a dark person like him

Nka : Nice meeting you Nandi

Bold voice he have an no one I mean no one have ever called me Nandi in my entire life ☹️ something about the way he called my name it was like he's intimidating me or just pitying me it all written in his face I hate him already

Me : Likewise

Sam : So how about you go to the kitchen an tell my staff that we need food

Me : um **clear throat** I think they know that we ready for them

Sam : Am your old brother so....kitchen

He said looking at me so scary if looks could kill I'll be dead by now, I stood up an sighed after that I tried to walk to the kitchen but I limped it was so hard but because I didn't want this animal to kill me I tried to walk normal

Nka : Is she limping?

He was talking to Sakhile and I was long gone I know that this guy will kill me today for this 😞 after a while I went back to the sitting room with a fake smile

Rato : You so beautiful I like your skin

Me : Thank you

Rato : So tell me about your brother

Me : My brother

The brother I thought of is Skhalo the only brother who cared about me so I just couldn't hold the tears from falling

Rato : Oh baby I didn't mean to make you cry

Me : No am just feeling so lucky to have a brother like him 😞
He's the best thing that ever happened in my life, he's always there for me and he loves me endlessly without him I feel helpless, I miss him **fake laugh** I mean like I miss him every day even if he's here cause he's the best 💔😞

I so miss Skhalo an I will call him tell him to come an fetch me I feel like I shouldn't have left home cause there I was loved an now here I am pretending to be a sister to this monster of a man

Rato : So sweet

Sam : Thanks little sis I didn't know that I meant so much to you

All along this buffy man was watching me like he's reading me an I hate that I just frowned an he also frowned an looked at his phone he typed something an looked at me once again but this time he was relaxed so I just ignored him cause he's actually creeping me out with this staring of his

Nka : Let's talk business Mr Ndlela

✘

✘

✘

✘

It was late an the visitors were long gone I was in my room thinking on what to tell Skhalo cause am calling him tonight

Sam : What was that about?

He said coming inside the room

Me : What?

Sam : You crying like I abuse you

Me : don't you? Don't you Sambulo? I mean like today you asked me to be your sister like I don't mean any shit to you

Sam : That guy is a bad guy I was protecting you

Me : I NEED PROTECTION FROM YOU SAMBULO NOT THAT GUY

Sam : Don't raise your voice on me sfebe (bitch)

Me : Oh well am your bitch right? I hate you I hate you an your disgusting face

Sam : What did you say?

Me : I sa....

I didn't finish my sentence he slapped me so hard between my eyes an he pushed me on top of the bed an climbed me after that it was punches after punches I screamed an ended up silently crying cause he was not stopping, it didn't stop from there he raped me cause he had a forceful sex with me I just wished death upon me, I just wished everything to just stop an rewind cause I wouldn't even choose this life am living ever again, I cried for the stupid choice I made an can't change

Me : Please Sambulo am sorry

He didn't stop pleasing himself with me I was crying because of the pain I was feeling

Me : Am sorry I won't provoke you again please stop am sorry

Sambulo 🤔🤔🤔🤔🤔💔

I don't know when he stopped what he was doing cause he was lying dead tired beside me I just cried.....I took my phone from the bed side silently an wrote a message for Zama

Me : Zama I need your help please I don't wanna be in this house anymorw he abuses me please help me Zama

I sent the sms when I turned the monster was looking at me like I just killed him he picked me up with my neck

Sam : BITCH WHAT ARE YOY DOING?

Me : S... Sa... Sam... 🤔

He dropped me down an paced up an down after that he took my phone an saw my message an he roared while smashing my phone on the wall 😬 I was terrified on the floor he dragged me with my hair down the stairs I was crying an I saw my life flashing right before my eyes

Me : Sambulo please it will never happen again

Sam : Very well it won't vele cause am killing yoy bitch

Advertisement

you take my love for granted huh?

Me : No no no I love you please Sambulo don't kill me what....
W... P.... Sambulo please don't kill me am begging you I know I
wronged you an I can see that you love me please don't kill me

Sam : Too late

He took his gun from behind him an pointed the gun at me

Sam : I really did love you but you chose to say I abuse you 😞

Me : Please Sambulo I still wanna live, I will not tell anyone
what happened at least take me home please

Sambulo : You killed yourself

Me : Sa....

He shot me in my tummy an I saw him crying, I touched my
tummy an I saw blood

Me : Sa.. Sa... Take me... Home..please 😞😞😞

He shot me once again I don't know what happened after that I
just fainted.....People who found me said they thought I was

dead because of the way I was even today I don't know what happened to Sambulo cause they saying that he was knowhere to be found

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Present Moment

Nandile

It been 8 years with no word from Sambulo or to even hear from him 😞 but he's been haunting me in my dreams like he's still in my life, every day I dream of raping me an shooting me, I dream of him crying like am the one hurting while on the other hand he's the one hurting me, I blame no one for the life that was presented to me but myself, I didn't date since that day he did all the unthinkable to me now am Nandile Zikhali who's just plain girl with a heavy past an everything happened so fast but I thank that I came out alive even though it took me 1 month to wake up but am just grateful I did, I live in fear of not knowing if he'll come back an kill me one day but what I think happened it's that he left me to die maybe he thinks am dead that qhy

he's not coming back, haven't called my family for 8 years now I think of them all my life am just afraid what will they say? Am just scared I don't know if my brother is ever gonna forgive me one day cause I miss him all the time not even a day passes without thinking about him an I failed at school for two years so am still studying an also working to keep my life going.... I woke up an did my morning hygiene cause I have to go to work after my bath I wore my uniform an went to the kitchen an found Zama making breakfast

Me : Morning

Zama : Hey baby you good?

For 8 years Zama has been my friend an always had my back, she's my sister an without her I don't think I'll survive, right now she's working an earning a huge salary if you know what I mean, am so proud of her, well I had to hide from my parents when they came this side for her graduation we'll talk about that some other time

Me : Am rushing to work

Zama : Okay so Aggie will come in the next 5 minutes

Me : Thank you so much I kn....

Zama : Come on go to work

Me : He's in his room getting ready

Zama : I got this now GOOOO

I rushed to work cause am always late an we always fight with my boss other than that am just happy at work, I got there 10 minutes later so she just laughed cause am always late like always guys

Neli : Ndile

Me : Hey nels

Neli : Good you at work table 10 is waiting for someone

Me : Oh God

Neli : Shake that ass an go

Neli is one of my colleague she's so bubbly an lively I took my small book an went to table 10 an I was so not ready for this day guys I mean like my mornings are nor great like at all because of these nightmares

Me : Good Morning Nandile at your service. Ready to order?

The customer kept quiet and I looked at him like what the fuck is wrong with this dude 😊 he's just staring at me

Guy : Nandi we meet again

That name again, together with that voice again oh my God Nkanyezi what if he's here? What if...

Me : 😬 I... I... I can't do this

I just ran away and my boss was calling me together with this dude it was like they were running after me but I didn't wanna hear anything from them especially Nkanyezi cause that only means one thing he's back and he will kill me this time around and I can't there's too much at stake here!!!!

Insert 12

Nandile

I ran away until I reaches where am staying cause it's just 30 minutes away from work I was so dead scared I mean what if he was to meet with Sambulo? The same man who wanted me dead by all means just because I revealed his true colors of abusing me 😞 I got inside the house an found Aggie

Me : Oh Aggie you home

I pretended to smile cause I was still scared, I didn't want to worry Aggie she's more than a helper in this house without her I don't think I'll be able to manage everything that is in my life right now cause after Sambulo a lot changed in my life

Aggie : Yes I was about to go cause am done with Sonke

Me : Oh you will come back later?

Aggie : Yes I will

Me : No don't bother I will take everything from here

Aggie : Thank you love enjoy your day

Me : Um thanks

She walked away without asking me questions she's like this, she worry to much but doesn't ask too much 😞

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

I chilled alone at the house an ignoring all the calls from my Manager cause I don't know what to say to her, am scared for my life an if Sambulo is back I will have to go back home although it really hard to go home now guys not that am scared because I went away without their permission but a lot more is complicated right now 😞 while chilling like that a knock came through an I stood up went to open the door was so shocked cause I found someone I didn't even think will come knocking on my door right now 😱

Me : What are you doing here?

Nka : Can I come in?

He was a lot older than the last time, well still intimidating as fuck but I won't let him do that to me I was controlled so much by a man that I would not let that happen again ☹️

Me : No

Nka : It fine I can talk while standing outside

Me : How did you find where am living?

Nka : I guess I asked around

Me : By around you mean Neli?

Well Neli do knows where am living cause she's living in the neighborhood flat

Nka : Guilty as charged, am sorry if I scare you at the restaurant

Me : No it fine

Nka : You looked terrified

Me : I said it fine so if you don't mind can you leave

Nka : Anyways am Nkanyezi Gcaba

Me : No longer Cele now?

Nka : Am leaving

He walked away an I watched him, why did he come here? Is he sent by Sambulo to come an see where am living? What's the story with this guy? A lot of questions came flooding in my mind more about why is he a Gcaba now? Or he used that surname to trick me 😊 am not gonna fall for any of his tricks... I went upstairs an wore some comfy clothes so that I can get going I need to make sure that Aggie doesn't kill me cause I promised her that I will do whatever she was suppose to do this afternoon

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Days passed with me being scared of going out but Zama thought that maybe am being paranoid kodwa what if am not? I don't want to risk it at all, I resigned at work an decided to look for another one maybe at the mall, today they called me for an interview an I only hope that I become successful I have a lot of

responsibility so can't risk it by being jobless and also my safety is more important right now, I wore some formal clothes and went to the kitchen to find Zama and Sane in the kitchen well Sane has been so helpful at first I thought that maybe she's spying for Sambulo only to find that she's just a broken girl like me who was abused worse she was more naive than me and even Sambulo took advantage of her, what I learned is that she did love Sambulo but the day he asked her to do the asking out to all the girls Sambulo wanted to make victims, at some point I used to think that maybe she hates me cause am one of those girls but only time will tell 😞

Me : Girls

Sane : Hey baby how are you?

Me : Scared

Zama : Don't be scared you will get this job

Me : what if they want experience?

Sane : What if they don't? Girl some companies only want to see the potential in you just go there and slay it

Me : Well if you guys say so 😞

Zama : You looking good... First impression last

Me : Yes I know

Zama : We will come to the mall later

Me : Bring...

Zama : Don't worry we will

Sane : Now go an make me proud that Jewelery store is looking for Nandile Zikhali

Zama : Yes Miss Ndile

Me : 😊 mxm will see you guys later

Sane : Bye

I walked out I mean I know that sometimes you have to trust in yourself but you know Sambulo took all that away from me, I don't even love my body anymore because of all the marks of being beaten in my body, even my face couldn't full recover from all the beating I have to hide the bruise with a make up 😞 my whole life was really messed up by a person I thought loved me, I was in a taxi when all of this came back I mean if I listened to my brother when he said that I shouldn't choose a man over family now his words are the only thing that makes me feel guilty over and over again

Advertisement

after a while I was outside the mall so I walked inside the mall without looking at the way my thoughts are elseway so I bumped into some girl who was so beautiful an she made me envy her body an flawless skin but she gave me nasty look

Girl : Watch where you going fool 😊😞

She cat walk past me am so shocked by what came out of her mouth, am I that ugly to be called a fool? 😞 yooo I walked straight to the Store an found a guy waiting outside the door I just went to him an greeted

Me : Um Good Day

Guy : You must be Nan... ndindile

Me : Nandile

Guy : Am not good with pronouncing names am sorry

Me : You can just call me Ndile

Guy : Ndile nice to finally see you am Cleo

Me : Oh you are the one to interview me?

Cleo : Yes sweetie but by the look of things you are the face I want people to see when entering the store

Me : I thought you selling jewelries only

Cleo : No darling it a Boutique 😊 so come this side I want you to tell you everything about this business an baby girl I have high security so don't let me down by showing me your true colors I looked at you an trusted you so don't make me feel like the looks may be deceiving

Me : Thank you

He showed me around while telling me everything that I need to know an lastly he gave me a uniform for me to wear an I feel like it's too revealing an my body is not perfect anymore I think he saw the facial expression

Cleo : Are you still okay?

Me : Um can I at least get something more not revealing?

Cleo : Why?

Me : My body is not so perfect an I have my reasons

Cleo : Baby these are my requirements 😊 I mean I don't even need experience or what so ever I just want you to sell my products an this is the uniform

Me : Um okay

Cleo : Now be a good girl an go home get some rest cause tomorrow it's your first day, you will sign the Contract tomorrow an we will talk about your salary 😊

Me : No problem at all

I walked away but before I could fully get out of the store he called out

Cleo : You can wear stockings to feel more comfortable

Me : Thank you so much I won't disappoint you Sir

Cleo : Jeez just call me Cleo 😊

He left me there I swear he's gay, his sense of fashion says otherwise so I took my phone an called Zama who answered on a forth ring

Me : Where are you guys?

Zama : Um Ndile

Me : Yes

Zama : We in Mugg an Bean

Me : Oh okay

Zama : Nandile y....

Me : Am coming

I hung up the phone I know she wants to say am always late an all of that I just got a new Job so what more could I want



✂

✂

✂

✂

As I walked in the restaurant there was a bunch of guys an they were making so much noise so my eyes stroll down an I saw Zama an Sane so I went to them, I notice that Zama is so uneasy I wonder what seems to be the issue cause I don't need no drama today

Me : I got the job

Sane : Oh my world I told you that you will get the job 😊 am so happy for you Baby come let me kiss

Me : Ayy suka wena (go away from here) 😏 what's wrong with you wena?

Zama : Um Nandile someone is here an I d...

Person : Zama

A voice I thought I would never hear again, my heart skipped a beat because of the joy an fear am feeling inside, Skhalo that's Skhalo I just felt my tears burning in my eyes but I controlled myself am sure he won't see me cause am no longer that person, Zama stood an went to hug him I guess cause she was giggling I envied her cause I should be the one being hugged an giggling like this, I made my bed so I should lie on it I didn't even want to turn cause I don't want to see his face

Skhalo : Look at you, I missed you so much

Zama : What are you doing here?

Skhalo : Well my boss called us this side for a big job so I couldn't miss it

Zama : Um.....

I than heard foot steps coming where we were an I knew that my fate has been decided

Person : Mama mama usubuyile (You here!)

I turned an looked at the young man who stole my heart well he's the reason am scared to go home but not even a day I feel like he's holding me back he's my Son Sisonke Zikhali, well when Sambulo shot me I thought my tummy was being shot you know when all your body feel pain an you don't know that difference that's what happened he shot me below my left breast an by God's grace the little soul he planted didn't die I don't know but I think it a miracle cause I didn't think my son would have survived what happened to me so I just looked at him with a smile on my face well his father may have killed my soul but he gave me a gift amongst gifts cause I love my son an not even him can stop me or make me look at him like he's a product of my abuse but when I look at him I see a handsome baby boy who's mine an who's everything to my life he's

practically my world I work for him cause I want him to don't feel like he doesn't have a father, he's 7 years old ♥😊....that's when Skhalo saw me an I felt his eyes piercing through my skin but I couldn't look at him cause am scared to see the hatred he might be feeling towards me

Sonke : Mama look at what I got

Me : **clears throat**

I can feel tears streaming down my face because of this, because of feeling a gap between me an my brother if it was those days he would have made the mall see that he's a bully that always made me laugh or smile without trying 😞😞😞 while in my thoughts I felt someone grabbing me an pulling me into his arms I felt safe again, I just cried cause I can feel that he's crying too ♥😞

Skhalo : You left me 😞 you left me all alone Little One I had no one else to turn to cause you left me 😞😞♥ an you didn't even look back, I waited for you at the airport an you never came, Ndile you didn't come

The more he talked is the more he hugs me so tight like he's afraid that I will leave him again 🥀😞 That broke my heart into pieces cause indeed I left him without looking back I felt so much pain because he's my blood an he's my better half 🥀 he's here an he's hugging me that's is too much for me an am so happy

Insert 13

Narrated

Skhalo was so happy to see his sister and all the hate he thought he had in his heart for was replaced by the love he once had for her and it's like he should protect her again like the old times he felt the need to be with him just like the old times

Skhalo : We need to talk

Ndile : I know why do...

Skhalo : No you can come to my flat

Ndile : You have a flat this side?

Skhalo : Yeah will be here for 2 Months

Ndile : Um okay we will talk

Skhalo : I.....

Guy : Skhalo the boss is here

Skhalo an Ndile stopped looking at each other an stared at the door

Ndile : Don't tell me you working for this guy

Skhalo : He's my boss

Ndile : He's working with Sambulo

Skhalo : Huh?

Ndile : He's working with Sambulo

Skhalo : Ayy we will talk in the flat I have a meeting to get too

Ndile : Sk....

Skhalo : I love you

He kissed her cheek an walked away going to the table that Nkanyezi an the others are, Nandile wanted to leave the place together with her son

✘

✘

✘

After a while Skhalo was done with the meeting

Skhalo : Nka a word

Nka nodded and went to the side with Skhalo, well Skhalo started working with Nkanyezi at the age of 15 when he was in grade 10 so he's like the second man of the main Boss (The unknown) since he knows everything about work and they talk about everything but he didn't know about the deal with Sambulo which is what he would want to know now by asking Nkanyezi

Skhalo : Boss

Nka : Nka to you

Skhalo : whatever man you know am used with the boss name

Nka : Mnara ke (Friend)

Skhalo : 😊 mxm so I wanna know about the deal you had with Sambulo

Nka : Bullet?

Skhalo : Sambulo is Bullet?

Nka : Yes

Skhalo : Still doing business with him?

Nka : No his deal was not interesting 🤔😊

Skhalo : I want that deal to go on

Nka : Why?

Skhalo : Cause this is the same dickhead who took my sister away from me

Nka : Nandi is your sister?

Skhalo : Do you know her?

Nka : Y...

Skhalo : An why are you calling her Nandi?

Nka : Aww it's nothing

Skhalo : Not my sister bro

Nka : Come on am not into your sister, Nandi was there that night of the deal an he said that she's his sister

Skhalo : Sister? That bastard you know I so want to kill him right now

Nka : All in due times

Skhalo : Oh so what did your brother say about the deal?

Nka : He didn't say anything, you know how Gcaba is

Skhalo : We need this deal I mean I will have to talk to Gcaba about this

Nka : Good luck I tried everything with this guy but he just want everything to be done by the books

Skhalo : Bro you know how your brother is so am just not surprised he's a heart cold gangster who don't sleep with both eyes closed

Nka : Tell me about it

Skhalo : When is he coming this side?

Nka : He said Tonight!!

Skhalo : Oh I will come an check on you guys later right now I have to get Ndile

Nka : It's Nandi to me

Skhalo : Tseg leave my sister alone 🤔😊

Nka : Can you just go

Skhalo took his car keys an walked to his car while on the way he received a call from Gcaba so he answered immediately

Skhalo : Gcaba

Gcaba : Will be waiting for you at the airport

Skhalo : What time?

Gcaba : Around 8

Skhalo : Sure

Gcaba : Don't be late Zikhali

Skhalo : I won't be late

Gcaba : No fucking

Skhalo : Aibo you can't tell me that Gcaba

Gcaba : You will be late I know Zikhali

Skhalo : Ayy leave me alone I will be early

Gcaba : I'll hold you to it

He hunged up his phone leaving Skhalo chuckling, after a while he was in Zama's gate waiting for Nandile to come out which she eventually did although she was so scared cause it been a while without seeing her brother but all in all she was just happy that at least they are going to talk an maybe forget about everything than move on, she got inside the car

Ndile : Bhuti

Skhalo : Little one

He drove off and there was silence in the car, the drive was just 10 minutes and they got to his flat, they got off and went inside the flat it was big as if he's living with someone else

Ndile : You will live all alone in this flat?

Skhalo : Yes unless if the Boss wants to live with me

Ndile : That Nkanyezi boy? He's so scary 😊

Skhalo : It better stays like that

Skhalo went upstairs and after like 5 minutes he came downstairs and threw himself on the carpet that was on his lounge

Skhalo : Come come don't be a bore 😊

Nandile giggled and also slept on the floor with Skhalo they looked at each other after that they laughed like seriously laughed 😄

Skhalo : I missed you dump ass

Ndile : Mxm am gonna tell ma...

Skhalo : Mama right? She still ask about you like every day

Ndile : Am such a disappointment nje

Skhalo : Listen little one you not a disappointment, well when I asked you to come here I wanted us to talk like seriously talk but it not worth it you know why?

Ndile : No

Skhalo : Cause I want us to forget about everything and start afresh you know how I missed us like this

I missed jumping to be on top of you when you don't wanna wake up in the morning

Ndile : 😊

Skhalo : I missed you little one, my jackets misses you an your touch, I misses your smell like I used to be in your room an smell every clothes you have just to feel you presence so now I don't wanna make you cry by saying hurtful words cause I wanna see you happy an our parents will be happy to see you too

Ndile : I missed you too

Skhalo : So the Little Man?

Ndile kept quiet an looked down so Skhalo tickled her she laughed out loud

Skhalo : Talk to me don't make me take it out of you the only way I can which is to tickle you until you fart 😊 oh how I missed that puuuuu you make

Ndile : Gross 😊 well he's my son

Skhalo : With Sambulo?

Ndile : Yeah with him

Skhalo : he makes you happy? I mean like yoy glow when you talk about him

Ndile : He's my life Skhalo like I can't imagine my life without him cause he bought nothing but joy an happiness in my life

Skhalo: I wanna be in his life

Ndile : Really?

Skhalo : Please don't make me laugh yoooo you so ugly when you cry phela it's torture 😊

Ndile : Mxm 😊

They chilled and joked around, Skhalo didn't want to dwell in the past so he decided to just let the past be, they spoke until they fell asleep, Skhalo lost the track of time that Gcaba started calling him so he jumped and saw the time

Skhalo : Shit!

He woke up and looked at his cute sister so he just took the small blanket that was in the couch and laid it on her gently without waking her up and ran straight to the bathroom to wash the smell off his breath, after that he drove off to the airport after a while he found Gcaba who was spitting fire cause he hates waiting people

Skhalo : You will laugh cause I won't take someone who's so sour to my car

Gcaba : want me to blow you up?

Skhalo : I'll die nice knowing that at least this dickhead is satisfied I mean you always find joy after killing 😊

Gcaba : Mxm can we just go

Skhalo : My man how are you? I mean like while must I always be the one to fetch you in this stupid airport

Gcaba : Maybe because you my always late favourite

Skhalo : Mxm 😊 where to?

Gcaba : Your flat

Skhalo : Thought as much why not home?

Gcaba : Not in the mood for my mother

Skhalo : Still going on about the girl?

Gcaba : Yeah

Skhalo : Gcaba you can't die alone you need to get married

Skhalo was mimicking Gcaba's mother

Gcaba : 😊 I wonder how do you always manage to make me laugh

Skhalo : am the best that's why! 😊 Asivaye jo (Let's go)

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

ᄀ

Gcaba and Skhalo went inside the flat so Gcaba saw a chick sleeping on the floor he looked at Skhalo

Gcaba : Was this bitch worth it?

Skhalo : Do....

Ndile : Let me hope by saying "Bitch" you not talking about me



She said waking up from the floor, Gcaba was irritated by this girl who is she to question him like this

Gcaba : I wonder what's special about you cause you just a simple girl didn't know Skhalo would fall like this 🤔😊

Ndile : You can't call someone a bitch on your first meet

Gcaba : First meet my left foot 😊

Ndile : Tseg yezwan? Tseg nx (Piss off) Bro take me to my son

Gcaba : Bro?

Ndile : Next time do your research before you talk shit about me

Gcaba : Skhalo take this girl to wherever her son is

Skhalo : She's my sister you know that right?

Gcaba : I don't care just take her to her son

Skhalo : Not gonna apologise I mean you can't talk to her like that Gcaba

Ndile : GCABA another annoying Gcaba? Who knows maybe you also lying about your surname just like that Nkanyezi who's also a dickhead 😊 I will not be told by you what to do an especially if you are this stupid an foolish, I will sleep in this flat an you will see more of this normal girl who's Skhalo's bitch 😞 you don't scare me with those intimidating looks you have, you don't fuckin scare me with that stupid an childish behaviour you have you remind me so much of mt ex who have no life all his life is based on being a low life perv who abuses girls so you just like him, just go an search yourself cause No brada it a no no from me 🖐️

Ndile went upstairs angry cause this guy is so full of himself as for Gcaba he was so amazed to see a girl standing up to his jerkiness behaviour 😞 no one has ever done this an he's

tempted to feel more of this fire as for Skhalo he was just looking at Gcaba cause he also wants to say his peace of mind

Gcaba : Ay manje please 🚫(Not now)

He also went upstairs and when he got there he found the room he used to sleep on locked

Gcaba : Skhalo where am I suppose to sleep with this bitch around 😬

Ndile : Find a hotel bitch 😬

She said shouting from inside the room that she locked

Gcaba : Fuck off wena 😬

Ndile : Tseg ndaba yakho (piss off) 😬

Gcaba was so angry at so much disrespect coming from this kid

Insert 14

Nandile

The nerve of that guy to call me a bitch in my brother's place, you know I couldn't sleep thinking about my son I mean he's all confused at where I am and why am I not back yet, I want Skhalo to take me to the house so I did my morning hygiene then went to his room took some of his clothes I mean I missed doing this, I wore his clothes and then went downstairs to find no one in the lounge so I went to look for him in the lounge I only found this stupid ass and he was busy doing something I don't and didn't see me so I turned and walked away

Gcaba : Rude to not greet

Me : Mxm

Gcaba : Skhalo is gone for errands

Me : I didn't ask that

Gcaba : I know that you looking for him, he said you must wait for him

Me : Am leaving my son is waiting for me at home

He kept quiet like I didn't just say something to him, I gave him a stare he was not looking at me at all so I wonder how did he know that am here, This guy is well built, muscles all over the place of you know what I mean, he's also intimidating like his brother, he's just a man unlike Nkanyezi 😞👊 ohhhh Snap I have to get to work 😓

Me : Um....can you take me home I need to go to work

Gcaba : I can't

Me : Nx why did I even ask

I walked away an went upstairs to take my small bag than rushed downstairs I looked at the time an I only have like 2 hours to get to work an to also see my son 😞 I have to swallow my pride an ask nicely cause I don't wanna be late, I found him eating an I swear I nearly dropped on my knees this guy is hot like really hot but with so much anger an I know better than to think about that

Me : Um Please am begging you, my son surely misses me an I will have to get to work am la....

He stood an walked passed me while taking his car keys I assume

Gcaba : Not gonna wait for you

I rushed behind him like a small kid 😞 we got inside the house an he drove away while in my thoughts he spoke

Gcaba : What happened to your hand

I have a scar that was left by Sambulo when he was abusing me I just hid it inside the jacket cause I don't want him asking anymore questions

Me : Nothing

Gcaba : Mmmm

His phone rang so he answered the call on speaker

Person : Melusi Gcaba

Gcaba : Ma (Mom)

Mom : Why didn't you tell me that you this side? Heh?

Gcaba : Was gonna come an see you

Mom : When?

Gcaba : Sometimes during the week

Mom : nonsense I want you in my house today Gcaba ,today!!!

Gcaba : Mmmm

Mom : Bye

She dropped the call an Gcaba kept his composure 😞

Gcaba : Am not a taxi driver so I won't know where you going if you not gonna tell

He said that watching ahead the way an I rolled my eyes

Me : Turn Left

He did as I instruct him after a while we were outside the house

Me : Thank you

Gcaba : Mmm

Me : Can you stop with this mmmm thing

Gcaba : Can you get out of my car I wanna go to the flat an eat

Me : Mxm

I got off the car an walked away I mean this guy is so rude why can't he just drop an die 😊 I got inside the house an found Zama getting ready for work

Me : Hey mama

Zama : Oh Hey 😊 how are you? An how was your night with Skhalo?

Me : It was great we mended our broken pieces

Zama : Am so happy for you, Skhalo was a mess an he couldn't even notice things that he noticed before

Me : Like?

Zama : M... **clear throats** his job

I swear she wanted to say Me, is Zama also in love with my brother?

Me : Aibo Zama

Zama : I have to go Sonke is upstairs waiting for an obviously sulking

Me : I can imagine well have a good day

Zama : You too enjoy your first day at work

Me : Thanks you know I will have to go to school today

Zama : Send my regards to Sane for me

Me : Will do Baby

Zama : Love you both bye

She rushed to her car an I went upstairs to see my baby I found him getting ready for school

Me : Baby

Him :....

Me : My life

Him :....

He's sure sulking I mean it's the first time leaving him for the whole night so I will have to make it upto him, what scare me is that he's growing to be so much like his father not with actions but he's so looking like his father but he's cute an handsome my very own man an I don't think there will ever be someone who will take my heart an make me love him 😞 am so tired an not ready to go that road again

Me : Am sorry Sthandwa Sam momny had to go an see your uncle an your uncle was not okay cause it been a while without seeing or even talk to each other, so mommy had to take care of that I mean I always teach you that family means everything right?

Him : Mmm

Aibo that Mmmm again today? What with these guys 😊

Me : I love you baby an am sorry this will never happen again I promise I will always come back to you even if it late okay?
Now look at me handsome one

He turned an looked at me while frowning

Me : Won't you smile for mommy? 😊

Him : No

Me : Aww 😞 mommy is hurt

Him : Am joking I forgive you only if you promise to never do that again

Me : I promise baby

Him : Noq let's go to school

Me : Ain't you gonna say I...

Him : I love you too mum 😊

That made my heart smile I mean he's so adorable an always makes me smile

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

After a while I was at work doing what is required of me while busy like that I felt someone tapping me from the behind I turned only to find Nkanyezi standing in front of me

Nka : Nandi The Queen Of The Zulu's

He smiled an I actually smile too he's so cute more like girlish cute if you know what I mean

Nka : She smiled 😊 How are you?

Me : Am good just hanging in there an you?

Nka : Am alright, you working here? Where's Cleo?

Me : He's at the back an yeah am working here

Nka : Oh that's good

Me : So what can I get you?

Nka : Cleo

Me : Why Cleo?

Nka : You wanna get me you? 😊

Me : I should be flattered by that but Naaa am not, I'll call Cleo up

Nka : 😊 Okay no problem

I walked away an called Cleo than went back to the shop

Me : He's coming

Nka : Thanks so you met Gcaba?

Me : Your Jerk ass brother of cause

Nka : 😊 He said something offending isn't?

Me : He called me a bitch

Nka : Jesus Christ what did you do?

Me : Because I was sleeping in my brother's flat on the floor an he was late to fetch him that's why

Nka : That's my brother for you, he's a pain in the ass

Me : Sure is

Nka : So how did you find him? Like is he good?

Me : Are you asking me if your brother is handsome or not?

Nka : Obviously

Me : 😁😁

I just laughed while watching him aibo is he seriously asking me that

Me : Not gonna answe that

Nka : Why?

Me : Because that's so gayish of you to ask me that 😊

Nka : Fine than don't answer, how about I take you out for dinner?

Me : No thanks

Nka : It will be me, you

Skhalo and Gcaba, you can also call your friends over

Me : Another day or let say minute with your brother No thanks

Nka : He's not that bad come on it will be fun you can even come with your son I'll like to spend sometime with him

Cleo : Oh Sweaty come this side sorry to keep you waiting

That's cleo for you an Yes he's gay 😊 that was not so hard to see

Narrated

After work Ndile decided to take Nkanyezi's offer to go out with the boys she took Sane,Zama an Lihle with her as for Sonke he decided to just be with Aggie because of wanting to his school work, they were in some dodgy club in the neighborhood 😞

Ndile : I feel like this is a bad idea

Sane : Come on let loose this is gonna be a lit night

Skhalo saw the girls so he went to them

Skhalo : Little one

Ndile : Hey bro

Skhalo : Come this side, Ladies

Zama just smiled an for Sane an Lihle they greeted back an they went to the table where Skhalo an the guys were, it was Gcaba, Nka , Skhalo, Msizi an Khetho

Nka : You came 😊

He said looking at Nandi who nodded

Skhalo : Nkanyezi

Nka : What?

Skhalo : Not my sister

Nka : Can you calm down am not into your sister jeez

Skhalo : It better be like that

Gcaba was just not in the mood for all of this he just wanted to go an sleep, well he's that kind of a guy who don't have time for girls if you just give him food, booze but not much an weed you are done, Sane was so charmed by Gcaba an she was so sure that she'll get him 😞

Skhalo : Going to buy some drinks, what people want? Little one?

Ndile : Just orange juice please

Gcaba : Orange juice?

Ndile : Don't start 🖐

Gcaba : Give us two Vodka's

Ndile : Bro Orange juice

Gcaba : Vodka Skhalo am the boss

Nandile was so getting angry cause she don't want anyone to control her like how Sambulo did, Gcaba can see that Nandile doesn't want to be controlled so he's just craving for her to burst and he also wants her to take control of this instead of him winning as for Nka he finds this amusing

Skhalo : Zama come with me please

Zama : Okay girls?

Sane : Anything maybe a cocktail will be good

Lihle : Please Skhalo decide for me 😊

Zama so wanted to wash that smirk off Lihle's face

Skhalo : Sure

They walked away leaving the table all deadly silent until Nka decided to talk

Nka : Nandi tell me where is your son?

Ndile : He's home, he said that he wanna stay behind and do his homework as long as I go back home there won't be any problems

Gcaba : Your Son can see how much of a ****clear throats**** you are

Ndile gave him a dead stare

Nka : Come on Gcaba not again

Gcaba raised his hands as a sign of saying sorry

Msizi : Who would have thought you'll be so grown an beautiful
Nandile

Ndile : Thanks

Senzo : Who are the girls Ndile?

Ndile : Oh this is Sane an that one is Lihle they are my friends
from school

Msizi : Nice knowing you both

Sane : Likewise we would also like to know the guys

Nka : Am Nka, this is Msizi an Senzo

Sane : An who is this? 😊

Nka : Gcaba

Sane : Is that a name?

Nka : Surname

Lihle : Oh he likes to be called Gcaba

Nka : Yeah

Sane : Nice knowing you guys

Skhalo came back with the drinks

Skhalo : Your orange juice little one

Gcaba : I thought I said Vodka

Ndile : Can you shut up please

Gcaba : What's scaring you huh? Vodka or what?

Ndile : What the hell is your problem?

Gcaba : We drinking Vodka an that was not up for discussion

Ndile : I will not be told what to do

Ndile picked up the glass with the juice but Gcaba snatched it away an threw it on the floor

Gcaba : I don't like people who don't listen

Ndile : Skhalo please take me home

Skhalo : Gca....

Gcaba : What are you afraid of? Being controlled or listening or you just afraid of boys

Ndile : Skhalo please take me home now please

Gcaba : You weak

He said that shaking his head, Ndile stood up and took her bag so is Gcaba he also stood up

Gcaba : You weak Nandile

He said her name with so much authority, that even Ndile felt like her name sounds more good coming out of his mouth

Gcaba : Ready to run away just because I controlled what you gonna drink? Miss Big mouth running? ...Baby girl you need to stand your grounds don't let anyone walk over you and then run away tell from your troubles if he or she fuck you over tell that fool to fuck off slap them scream do whatever you want don't be this weak, don't be naive Nandile yaz no wonder **clears

throats**....don't be this weak now sit down have your orange juice

Skhalo : Ndile?

Gcaba : Don't worry she will sit, am on my way I don't have time for this

He was about to walk away when Ndile turned him and slapped him so hard in the face, Gcaba smirked

Ndile : Don't ever tell me what to do 😡

Gcaba : Yes Ma'am

Everyone was so amazed by all this, as for Ndile she don't know but what Gcaba said made her realise that she's all talks and no action, Gcaba walked near her and whispered

Gcaba : Be like this and no one I mean no one will ever abuse you again 😊

With said he walked away leaving whistling Ndile wondering how did he know that she was abused? Cause even Skhalo he doesn't know that she was abused by Sambulo that left her confused....

Insert 15 ♥

Gcaba

Hi my name is Melusi Meh Gcaba am 36 years old, yes am old but you won't tell cause I take care of myself, am not that buff but I do have muscles, I have a dark skin an more like a Zulu man 😊 I do a lot of businesses some legal but mostly illegal an am what they call "The Unknown" no one knows that am the boss of the underground world causw I like to keep my steps clean, I do it for my family cause I do have one, my mother an father are still alive, I have two younger brothers an I also have one sister who is such a darling 😊 I hustle for them an I will do anything for them cause they are practically my whole life, I love to eat as you all noticed an I like to be all alone, I isolate myself towards everything, I only have one friend an that is Skhalo he's my right hand best friend without him I don't think I'll be able to stand tall as I am standing 😞....you can call me annoying or whatsoever but what you must know about me I like to challenge an also love to be challenged an Nandile is a bit of a challenge but if you dig like more she's fire, me an fire are best friends cause I like when there's war an killing, some say am heartless but I just tell them straight that it part of life I

mean we live in a cruel world where you will have to do whatever it takes to survive,....Yesterday that girl slapped me you know I was so angry inside cause no one has ever slapped me before that was practically my first slap an I felt numb but kept my composure cause I was in front of people an I provoked her that why I let it slide, am sure you noticed that am no talker I just speak when it's due 😊 let's skip all this part where I have to explain all the shit that I do let's get the groove going, well today am going to see my mother I know that it will be one thing with her "MARRIAGE" we have been always fighting about this with her cause I don't wanna get married, to even think about it makes me want to just die like right now... 😊😞...Don't get me wrong I don't like dating I just don't have time for girls, sometimes I do sleep with them but that ends there cause I don't want to complicate things for myself, I did all my hygiene than wore something good cause that woman loves to even judge the way you dressed

I took my phone an called Skhalo who answered on the third ring

Skhalo : Sure

Me : Am g...

Skhalo : Take her off that table Nka please.... Yeah man you sayin.... Nandile maan I will kill you get off that table 😬

Me : Skhalo

Skhalo : Bro what's up?

Me : Am going home what's happening there?

Skhalo : Nothing I won't handle

Me : Fine I'll see you later

Skhalo : sure

I don't have time for that girl I just wonder what is she doing on top of the table am sure guys are hovering around her the bitch she is mxm 😊 I hung up my phone an went to my car cause I want to come back early

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

After a while I was in the gate as it written "GCABA" in bold words well you could ask my mother cause she's responsible for that 😬

Me : Gents

Guards : Wola boss

Me : Sure oledi? (mother?)

Guard : She's inside

Me : Yizo-ke (Sure)

I walked inside to be met by my young brother Banzi

Me : Banzi

He turned and smiled well this family is so fond of each other and we always stick by each other's sides 😊 he hugged me well he's young (18) so you could imagine

Banzi : How are you brother?

Me : Am good just missed you guys

Banzi : Lies

Me : Serious am here to stay for two months cause I want to spend more time this side

Banzi : why are you not living with us?

Me : Because of.....

Person : Melusi Gcaba

I turned an looked at this beautiful queen that I call my mother, she's everything you need in a mother, she cares about each an everyone of us an she only wants what best for us... She was not alone a beautiful girl was with her I wonder who is her an what is she doing here cause I don't want to even think what am thinking cause I'll just be crazy right here an right now I went to my mother an she hugged me more like squeezed my life out of me 😞 after sometime she let go of me an smiled

Mum : My handsome son 😊

Me : Mama

Mum : Am so happy to see you baby come this side

She pulled me to the lounge an we sat down this girl was busy looking at me I don't know if there's something maybe in my

face or something cause she's scaring me with constantly staring

Mum : Um how is New York?

Me : Good nothing interesting though

Mum : Oh baby you know that you not getting any younger, you need to get married an bring me some grnadchildren

Me : I know but am not ready for that

Mum : When will you be ready?

Me : I don't know

Advertisement

why don't you start with Nkanyezi I mean he's also old enough he needs a wife too

Mum : Not Nkanyezi he's still young

Me : 😊 Mum can we just enjoy this moment without fighting cause what you saying really makes me angry

Mum : Aibo I will slap you right now, I haven't done it to you an your stupid face but if you say that one more time I will ☹️

Me : Am hungry

Girl : I can get you something to eat

Me : No sister am okay I will make my own food

This is what you must know, I do my own food that not even my own family do, well my mum last did my meal when I was 13 years old, am just used to this, well I do go to restaurants an all that but as for someone else to cook for me in the house am not interested

Me : I make my own food

I stood up an went to the kitchen to make something to eat while busy with that I felt someone behind me

Girl : Gcaba

Me : Sure

Girl : Am Nobuhle but you can call me Hle

Me : Nice knowing you No.. Nombuso

Hle : Nobuhle

Me : Yeah that

Hle : Am sorry to just that mama said that you might be a good guy who will make a good husband one day 😞

Me : Husband? That's a bit extreme don't you think?

Hle : I know right 😊 but what do you think about marriage?

Me : Nothing

Hle : Don't you crave what your mother an father have?

Me : No I don't

Hle : I do nna I wanna have my own family an do whatever I want with them 😞

Me : Mmmm

Well I don't have time for this whole story, believe me she's beautiful an all that but am just not interested

Nka : NKA IS IN THE HOUSEEEEEEE

That's Nkanyezi I don't why is he doing that cause I mean it's so late an to have someone who will just shout like this 😊 which is why I prefer being alone

Nka : Oh afternoon people

He said coming inside the kitchen

Hle : Hey Nka

Nka : Wuuuu Nandi will slap you if she finds out that you busy with her boyfriend

Is this dude drunk or he's just plain stupid? I mean just like 1 hour ago I thought maybe he have interest on Nandi an now he's saying this 😬

Hle : He have a girlfriend?

Nka : Obviously I've just said that anyways I have to go an sleep am so sleepy

Me : Mmmm

Nka : Nandi said she hates that so don't do it again 😊

Me : Mmmm mmmm mmmm

Nka : Tseg

Me : Nawe 😊

Nka : See you

He left me with this girl an disappointment was written all over her face 😞

Hle : I have to go can't believe I wasted my time

She left me in the kitchen well I don't care cause I don't even want this girl in my life 😊 in fact I don't want any girl in my life

Narrated

It was late that night when Gcaba went back to the flat an found the place dark so he just went upstairs cause he only wanted to sleep, he went to the room an took a quick shower after that he wore only his boxers an went straight to bed, he got inside but felt like he's not alone so he just ignored that cause who could he be with in the room, he slept when Nandile

turned sides on the bed she felt a cold body beside her an she became sober same time cause one thing came on her mind SAMBULO 😬 she screamed cause Gcaba to jump for his life Nandile lit the lamp that was beside her an saw Gcaba

Ndile : What are you doing here? 😬

Gcaba : The fuck? You in my room an asking me that shit!

Ndile : Am not asking you any shit bitch what are you doing in this room? This is my brother's flat so what his is also mine

Gcaba : Bullshit! This has been my room like forever

Ndile : I don't care 😬 get out

Gcaba : In your dreams

Ndile : My dreams? Get out!! You wish to be in my dreams I don't have a nightmare 😬

Gcaba : I wish you could have one

Ndile : GET OUT

gcaba : Never you are the one who should go back to your son am sure he's crying where he is, his mother is busy bitching around an he's all alone

Nandile thought of her son and the promise she made "I will always come back to you"

Ndile : Oh my God

Nandile took his jeans and wore it that was when Gcaba realised that she was half naked and her body was flawless but in its own way, she's not good shaped but she's just a goddess even though Gcaba is not interested in any girl for that matter 😞 ,Nandile thought to herself how will she get home

Ndile : Melusi

Gcaba was shocked cause no one has ever called him like this apart from his mother, now a girl not just any girl but a person he doesn't like at all calls him Melusi 😞 he just looked at her blankly

Gcaba : What?

Ndile : Please can you take me to my home

Gcaba : Anything to get your face out of my room

He took his car keys and walked out leaving Nandile, she quickly searched for some T-shirt for him to wear and followed him, she got inside the car and gave him the T-shirt

Gcaba : Mmmm

Ndile : Mxm

He wore what was given to him, he drove away but also grumpy cause he wants to sleep it been a long day

Ndile : My son would have killed me in the morning

Gcaba : Mmmm

Ndile : Thanks for reminding me

Gcaba : Mmmm

Ndile : Can you stop saying mmm?

Gcaba : Mmmm

Ndile was so irritated cause Gcaba is being a d*ck right now after a while they were outside the house

Ndile : Um thanks

Gcaba : Sure

Nandile got out of the car an Gcaba watched her cause he wanted to make sure that she's safe, he may be what he is but he care about Skhalo so it's his responsibility to make sure that she's okay, Nandile went inside the house an Gcaba drove away, Nandile found Sane in the lounge

Sane : Who was that?

Ndile : Gcaba

Sane : Gcaba? Is that Nka's brother? The one that I want?

Ndile : Please take him I don't want him

Sane : But you came with him

Ndile : Because he's my brother's best friend so I had to come back cause my brother is so drunk an couldn't bring me here

Sane : It better be like that cause I won't accept defeat from you again

She laughed but Nandile took that seriously cause Sane may be her friends but we mustn't forget that she was abused because of Nandile so there's a possibility that she hates Nandi with passion, another question that came in Nandi's mind is that why is Sane not sleeping what was she waiting for? Is she stalking Nandi or she couldn't sleep? nandi was so worried now but what is more important is that the difference is that she don't love Gcaba so Sane can take him for all she cares, Sane was so adamant that she will get Gcaba in the end not even Nandile can stop that from happening.....

Insert 16

Nandile

Weeks passed an life has been amazing with my new job, Cleo has been a good boss to me I don't have any complains as for Skhalo an I we are just crazy siblings an it seems like he's covering all those years apart, him an Sonke are buddies an he even spends weekends with his uncle cause apparently am not cool than Uncle Skhalo an Gcaba, as for him am not sure cause I hardly see him laugh or to even smile, am just thinking of visiting my parents home but I want to do it with Skhalo an he's good with it, Zama an Skhalo are still playing hide an seek with each other an I don't even want to entertain whatever they doing 😊 today am going to the mall with my son phela am not working an he's also not going to school he's such a grown man an soon it will be his birthday 😊 my son will be turning 8 years old 🎉🎉 am so happy...now I can see why my mother was always happy with us it's because of the love that you just feel whenever you think of your child 😊 I love my son.... I woke up cause he's busy jumping around an shouting you know this young man is moody sometimes he's happy but other days he's not an I don't like that cause that exactly how his father was, I would die if my child was to beat a girl up 😊 I did my morning hygiene after that I wore my clothes covered my scars with the

make up that's my daily life I went downstairs to be met by Sonke an Sane in the lounge talking none stop

Sonke : Mama you look so beautiful

Me : Thank you so much baby, you look so handsome who chose these clothes for you?

Sonke : Aunty Sane

Me : Oh

The way my son is dressed it's like am watching a small Sambulo cause he's wearing like how he did, I don't know what is Sane trying to do cause really it's not on

Me : Um baby can you go upstairs brush your teeth

Sonke : Okay

He rushed upstairs an am now left with Sane

Me : Sane

Sane : Friend

Me : What are you doing? Why is my son wearing clothes like how Sambulo did?

Sane : What? You just being paranoid

Me : I know what I see Sane don't ever do that I want Sonke to wear clothes like how I dress him an you know that

Sane : You are the one who brought these clothes moss

Me : I don't know what you trying to do but don't use my son for that

Well she's been giving me attitude just because of Gcaba who I don't even care about I mean that man is so full of himself 😊

Sane : Fine am sorry

Me : Sonke am waiting for you

I don't have timw for her sorries cause all the time it's the same story with her, my son rushed to me an we walked out the house to the taxi rank

Sonke : Mom when I grow older I'll buy you a car

Me : Really?

Sonke : Yes I don't want you to feel heat from the sun

Me : Oh where did I find you? 😊

Sonke : You stole me from the hospital

Me : 😊 who are you an what have you done to my son?

Sonke : 😊

I love this young man he always makes me smile even if am angry or sad he consoles my heart ♥.. After a while we arrived at the mall an I want us to start at my workplace cause I want to help Cleo with something small he asked me to help him, we went to the store an found him already waiting for us

Cleo : Thanks you here come this side so that we can talk

Me : Um okay...baby wait for me here don't go anywhere

Sonke : Okay mama

I walked to the back with Cleo after like 5 minutes I heard my son screaming yooo i felt pee near I ran to where he was an found him in the arms of Gcaba I felt like slapping the shit out of me for scaring me to death cause I thought that something is happening to my son

Sonke : Uncle Meh

Gcaba : Hamban? (how are you?)

Sonke : Moja razo (Am fine uncle)

Gcaba : Yizo ke 😊

Did he just teach my son to speak the tsotsi language am so gonna kill him

Me : What are you doing here?

Gcaba : Hello to you too anyways Am here with my sister, Cleo I believe my order is ready

Cleo : Yes we were just fixing it for you, Ndile come we not done

Me : Put my son down please

Sonke : Come on Mama I wanna be with uncle he's cool

I saw a smirk in this dickheads face 😊 I just rolled my eyes

Me : fine I will be back

Cleo took me by my hand an we went to the back

Gcaba

I know you must be wondering how come we friends with her child... I adore little one's not that I want to be a father but nje I like it when I see something so small being happy because of me not that I wanted to provoke Nandile or what but I just love Sonke he's so alive an always willing to learn new things, well he loves to speak with me using the language we spoke in right now 😊

Sonke : Where are you going after here?

Me : House hunting

Yes you heard right I want a house this side, Skhalo was fucking a bitch yesterday an I couldn't sleep can you imagine that torture not that I wanted to also be part of that, I felt like am invading his privacy an he's traumatising me 😏🤔♀️ so am looking for a flat or a whole house

Sonke : House?

Me : Yes

Sonke : Can I come with you? I mean my mum is here to buy some girlams staff so I want a man to spend time with

Me : 😏 who said your mum is here to buy some girl's staff?

Sonke : Because she's sick

Me : Sick?

Person : Period pains

Said my small sister coming from the behind she's only 15 years old but she's acting so old if you know what I mean, what scares me is that she's rude an don't even listen I mean respect is not on the package

Me : Oh Sonke meet Kuhle my small sister

Kuhle : he's young how can you formally introduce me to him?

Me : Because he's not that young 😊

Kuhle : Fine how are you boy boy?

Sonke : Sharp

Kuhle : 😊 I won't be surprised if you are the one who taught him that sharp

Me : Mxm

Sonke : 😊

Cleo came back with my package an Nandile was not with him

Me : You done?

Cleo : Yes am done

He gave me my things an Kuhle jumped cause believe me when I say Kuhle loved being spoiled which makes me wonder if she doesn't blessers to spoil her 😞 I would kill any man with a big

beard hovering around my sister, Nandile also came to us and I saw a frown in her face after looking at my small sister I wonder what happened

Ndile : Sonke we need to go

Me : Sonke is coming with me


Ndile : Are you asking me or telling me? Well sorry to disappoint you but he's coming with me

Sonke : Mum

Ndile : No Sonke come let's go

Kuhle : Aww come on we won't hurt him you can see that he wants to cry now because of all this

Ndile : Really like how you called me a fool the other day after bumping into you?

Kuhle's eyes popped out and it is so like her to do so  that's why she frowned when she saw her

Kuhle : Me?

Ndile : No the person behind of cause you

Kuhle : Am so sorry I guess I had a bad day

My sister saying sorry to a person who's not family? That's the first!

Ndile : Fine but still Sonke we leaving, I will not leave you with this dickhead

Kuhle : Aibo 🤔

Ndile : come baby let's go

Sonke was now crying already an I won't even beg cause I know this will turn into a fight

Sonke : Bye Uncle Gcaba 😞

Me : I will fetch you in the afternoon

Sonke : Okay

Ndile : Mmh

They left us standing there I was just smiling cause she's where I want her to be if you don't get what am saying you'll get it some other time

Kuhle : What was that about?

Me : I don't know

Cleo see you

Cleo : Okay baby

Me an Kuhle walked out while arguing cause she wants to know why did it feel like we fighting with Sonke's mum an am telling her that I don't know why

✘

✘

✘

✘

It was in the afternoon an I was done with my house hunting well I found a flat cause I can't buy a house, it's pointless since I won't be living this side this place is not my favourite place, a lot happened in this place an I hate it with everything inside me

☹️ will explain everything on a later stage for now am in Skhalo's flat I found him lying in the couch he must be tired from all the fucking he had yesterday

Me : Skhalo

Skhalo : mmmm

Me : Tseg vuka (Wake up)

Skhalo : Uyanya (Fuck off)

Me : I will shoot your ass if you don't wake up

Skhalo : No maaan Gcaba

Me : WAKE UPPPPPP

Skhalo : Nx fuck you yezwa?

He woke up irritated I jist laughed my ass out cause that exactly what I wanted to do

Me : Am leaving

Skhalo : You leaving? Where are you going?

Me : To my own flat

Skhalo : Why?

Me : Aibo I want my own privacy

Skhalo : Go well

Me : An you too fuck the bitches well

Skhalo : 😊 oh that's why you leaving?

Me : 😊

Skhalo : Want me to fuck you?

Me : Uyanya (Fuck off) 😊 am leaving because I want to leave don't confuse things

Skhalo : Sane is interested in you 😊

Me : Who's Sane?

Skhalo : Ndile's friend

Me : So?

Skhalo : Fuck her

Me : No I'll rather fuck your sister than her

His face changed real quickly from laughing to angry I just burst out an laughed at him well he's the only one who can manage

to hear my whole laugh, he's the only one who can make me laugh an lie with my stomach on the floor

Skhalo : Not my sister

Me : Am kidding 😊

Skhalo : Am serious we will have a huge problem if you ever do that

Me : Chill I won't do you like that

Skhalo : Although I'll prefer you than Nka don't get me wrong I love my sister an only wants what best for her so I'd prefer you than your brother not to fuck but love

Me : He's the one interested

Skhalo : Bra

Me : As for love? That's is far fetched 😊 I don't do love

Skhalo : I know stupido

Me : Am going to my flat after that am going to Nandile's house to take Sonke he's spending the night with me

Skhalo : Why?

Me : Cause Uncle Gcaba is cool

Skhalo : Aibo starting from when?

Me : I don't know let me bounce

Skhalo : Don't bully my sister Gcaba

Me : I won't don't worry

Skhalo : You better

Narrated

Nandile was in the house alone with no make up on an she was in her pj's so she was in the lounge watching television like all times, Sonke was asleep he waited for Gcaba until he fell asleep, Nandile heard a knock on the door so she thought that maybe it's Skhalo or Zama or Sane or Lihle cause those are the only people allowed to come inside at the gate more because of Sambulo she even gave them the picture of Sambulo so that they'll know if he's the one wanting to come inside, she went to open the door only to be met by Gcaba who was so amazed to see that Nandile is this bruised in the face an he couldn't see that because of all the make up she puts on her face 😊 Nandile felt ashamed cause she didn't want anyone else to see how her face damaged because of Sambulo

Gcaba : Can I come in?

Ndile : Yes

Gcaba walked inside the house wondering what really happened to Nandile, he went to the lounge and took a seat so Nandile went upstairs to put some make up on after a while she went downstairs to find Gcaba looking into the CD's that were on the table he wanted something unique when he looked up he saw the face Nandile again so he frowned

Gcaba : Take that make up out

Ndile : No

Gcaba : Now Nandile!

Ndile : I will not be controlled by you

Gcaba : Can I have Sonke?

Ndile : He's sleeping, he waited for you but you didn't come so he decided to sleep

Gcaba : I really wanna stay and cheer you up but I wanna see the real you, can you please take out that make up please am not tryna control you but please

Ndile : I don't trust myself enough to have you see my bruised ego

Gcaba : Who am I? Am a nobody in your life so feel free around me I mean am not here to get you to impress me or something so why not? Feel free around me am not a guy of so many words, who laughs more like everyday am just a normal guy, I don't even care about how girls dresses, how much of slay queens they are am just me so please wipe it out

He took out the shirt he was wearing and threw it at Nandi he was left with a white vest that was underneath, Nandi was just admiring the work of God in this man

Gcaba : Wipe that make up, and food you have here?

Ndile : Um yes

Gcaba : Where's the kitchen?

Ndile : I'll make you food

Gcaba : No thanks I make my own food, I want to come back and see the real Ndile

Gcaba went to the kitchen to find something to eat he's so hungry well he is always hungry 😞....after like a while he came back with food and Ndile was original now

Gcaba : What happened to your face?

Ndile : I had a fight with some girl at school

Gcaba : What was the fight about?

Ndile : ** faking a chuckle** It was a stupid fight don't worry about it

Gcaba : Can you abuse me an than tell me that we in a fight?

Ndile : What?

Gcaba : I mean like can you drag me down the stairs after that pin me down on the floor with your knee on my neck an than tell me that this is fight we fighting? Can you do that? More especially if we in a relationship an you controlling me, you just don't care about me like every time I have to submit to you so you do all that just because I didn't listen an you call that a fight can you actually do that?

Ndile : No that's abuse

Gcaba : Why? Why is not a fight? Why call it abuse?

Ndile : Because you are given no chance to fight back

Gcaba : So Am gonna ask again what happened to your face?
Were you given a chance to fight back?

Ndile : I don't wanna talk about it

Gcaba : Fine so can you wake Sonke up so that we can go he's spending the night with me

Ndile : No he can't

Gcaba : Why?

Ndile : He's my son so am bound to protect him

Gcaba : From?

Ndile : F.. F.. From you

Gcaba : You can come with us

Ndile : No

Gcaba : Am not gonna do anything to you, you not attractive enough

He said that while eating his sandwich that was more like a knife stab in Nandile's heart, to hear a guy saying those hurtful words, "You not attractive enough" Gcaba didn't see anything wrong in what he said cause indeed Nandile was not attractive

Nandile

I decided to go with Gcaba and Sonke cause I didn't want to scare my son by waking up in a place that he doesn't know, well I don't know the point of him going to his place but since he already came here to take him I might as well go with them, I know that am not that beautiful but he didn't have to say it like that in front of me worse 😞 so am in my so called room thinking about my whole life I mean I was so adamant that Sambulo was my future but he decided to abuse me and leave me just like that 😞 I know that my heart will never heal, I wonder will I ever get married and be able to trust again cause I will always think that I will only get hurt in the end, I don't know where is Gcaba so am just gonna head down to the kitchen, mind you am wearing my short pjs so yoy can imagine the awkwardness that will happen if I by chance find Gcaba downstairs worse my body is not so perfect since he already told me that am not attractive 😞 am so hungry so I went to the kitchen to check if I can find something to eat while busy with that I felt like someone is watching me so I just felt embarrassed to turn cause I know he's judging me 😞 I did what I was doing without minding him

Gcaba : I know you can feel my presence so you can turn

I turned an he was busy looking at his phone all dressed up in black an it's like he's coming from somewhere or he's still going somewhere

Me : Am sorry but I felt hungry

Gcaba : I can see that you wouldn't be holding that big bowl if you werw not hungry

Why is this man always putting me down with his words? 😞
you know ever since I got abused no one has ever made me feel so small other than this person in front of me I felt like screaming but I won't give him that benefit or that power that he will think he have against me

Me : Want some?

Gcaba : I'll make it

Me : I can make it for you

Gcaba : Spill it

Me : Spill what?

Gcaba : Where did you get the love potion?

Me : What?

Gcaba : You wanna make food for me

Me : Oh my God 😊

Like I seriously laughed I mean how can he think that I will put some love potion for him?

Me : Never

Gcaba : I'll make my food thanks

Me : Suit yourself

I walked away an he was just staring at me

Gcaba : You have a beautiful body

Me : **clear throats ** um thank you

Gcaba : Mmmm so that means you need to wear something not to show off like this, not so cool some of us are allergic to this

Me : Perv

Gcaba : 😊 thought I was hitting on you? Pshhh you wish 😊

Me : Mxm

Gcaba : Your potion is not working 😊

Is he seriously laughing? I mean this dude is always sour 🙄😊

Gcaba

I seriously laughed cause I love to provoke this girl an in one of the days she will be strong to take care of herself an stand for herself, well she's not attractive enough like most of slay queens with make ups an all that crap but she's more of a beautiful woman 😊 that what I can say for now, I saw that she was offended with what I said to her but am that kind who speak my mind an who is not interested in girls so if you don't understand me by now you will never do.... I know that she was abused I did a background check on her but I also wants her to be the one to tell me other things if you know what I mean

Me : You can go an sleep

She have a beautiful body filled with scars but they are just perfect, I've seen girls with fresh skins but their body ain't beautiful, as for her it's different in a cute way, I don't even want to go there cause my mind will just go wild....

Ndile : Um okay sleep well

Me : Sure

She walked away an I made myself something to eat while thinking about tomorrow well I have a big job, the cousin that I hate with everything inside me is doing some job tomorrow so I decided to sabotage him, when I hate someone I do everything in my power to make him or her squirm so that's what I will be doing tomorrow night, as foe these two they will have to go back to the flat where they are living I mean I can't put them in danger they are not mine to protect an even place my life for them

Advertisement

well I won't want anything to happen to them but it all stands there nothing more an nothing less 😊

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

It's in the morning when I woke an up turned here he was sleeping in my bed an I wonder when did he come in 🤔 I looked at him he looks so peaceful and he's so handsome I wonder what the hell is wrong with me, I woke up did my morning hygiene after that I went to my room an looked at this young man again, how did he get inside my room? An how come I didn't even hear any sound of him coming in, yaz it's the second time this happens, other day it was in his uncle's house he got inside my bed an slept, I saw in the morning that we slept together I wore some clothes than went downstairs to make some greasy breakfast but it seems like someone beats me to it cause it was smelling so great, when I got there I found her making breakfast

Me : Morning

Ndile : Morning am so sorry I just wanted to make breakfast for us more especially my son

Me : In my kitchen?

Ndile : You will have to deal cause you are the one who said my son should come here

Me : An you?

Ndile : You said I must come cause am not attractive enough

Me : Oh you still there 😊

Ndile : No am still here

Me : Whatever

Ndile : Sit down I'll dish up just now

Me : I ma...

Ndile : "I make my own food"

She said that mimicking me an I frowned

Ndile : I know that but can you just shut up an wait for food it won't kill

Me : If I die tell mama that you killed me

Ndile : Why you don't trust people with your food

Me : I guess am just used to it

Ndile : Even with your mom?

Me : Yeah at home they can cook an do all of that but I just do my own on the side I just don't trust people with my food

Ndile : Can you trust me?

Me : Yes I can

Ndile : which means you'll eat my food

Me : I'll try

Ndile : What I know is that it won't kill you

Me : Whatever

She dished up for me an the little man walked in walking slowly like the world was dropped on his shoulder 😞 I so wanted to ask what the hell is wrong....Ndile looked at him

Ndile : Did you brush your teeth?

Sonke : Mmmm

Ndile : Did you wash your face?

Sonke : No

Ndile : Go back an wash your face

Sonke : Am hungry

Ndile : Which is why you will go upstairs an wash your face fast

Sonke : Okay

Ndile : Okay who?

Sonke : Mommy

He ran upstairs an I just looked at this girl an rolled my eyes I mean was it necessary for what she did

Ndile : Don't roll your eyes at me wena

She said that punching me softly on my shoulder

Me : Abusive much?

When I said that her face changed an I need to fix this really fast but slowly we will get there, Sonke got back an we were sitting in the dinning table eating I mean it been a while being with people on the table eating with my parents it always about me getting married an am tired that's why I don't usually go home as for my father he's always busy more like an absent

father but he do provide for my siblings since am old enough an can provide for myself, well I started providing for myself at the age of 15 so it's not that hard an not that painful to see my father doing what he's doing

Sonke : Can I spend the night here again

Me : Um am kind of busy today

Sonke : I can always wait for you to come back home

Me : I know big man but you know what I can come an fetch you afterwards like yesterday than tomorrow we can spend the whole day together

Sonke : Tomorrow me an mommy are going somewhere, Please Uncle Meh sleeping with you is the best

Me : Which reminds me how do you get in my room without me noticing?

Sonke : I don't know

Ndile : He always does that?

Me : Yes

Ndile : Son...

Me : Ayy yin? (what?) Don't be such a bore let the kid be

Ndile : Stop spoiling my child

Me : I didn't do anything

Ndile : You are ruining him

Me : How?

Ndile : You are confusing my child

Nandile stood up and took all the dishes to the kitchen so I am left wondering how am I confusing anyone? I mean her son is the one following me so she came back

Ndile : Sonke we leaving

Sonke : Uncle Meh?

Ndile : I want to prepare for tomorrow am working Sonke

Sonke : You can go Uncle Meh will take me to the house later

Ndile : Melusi talk to this child please

Me : It fine I can bring him back later

Ndile : NO 😞

Me : Sonke can I talk to your mother alone

Sonke ran upstairs and am left with this confused girl I mean what the hell is her problem

Me : What's wrong with you?

Ndile : You are what's wrong in my life

Me : What did I do?

Ndile : You can't come in our lives especially my son's life and love him like a father worse you are going back to where you living, who will be left with broken young heart? Have you thought about that to all these sleeping together and "Uncle Meh will bring me back later" you are doing with my son? 😞

Me : You are scaring the child and not the one who asked for your son to love me and secondly there's nothing wrong with your son wanting to feel the love from another male version stop being a p***y and let the child be, all the shouting is wrong

Ndile : Don't tell me what I do wrong with my child

Me : Okay fine take him with you I won't bother him anymore

Ndile : Vele I am going with him

She walked out on me wuu you'd swear that we married couples or girlfriend and boyfriend, I mean what the drama for?

Sonke loves me an I love him an that doesn't mean I want to be his father 😊

Narrated

Later On

Gcaba was with Sonke, Nka, Skhalo and Msizi....Ndile decided to leave Sonke with Gcaba cause he was crying an that broke her heart but she demanded for her son to be back later

Skhalo : When will you take him back? I mean we have work to do

Gcaba : Just now

Nka : Sonke where is your mother?

Sonke : Home

Nka : Did you see her today?

Sonke : She was here an left earlier on cause she have to prepare for work

Nka : So she was here earlier on? 😊

Skhalo : Gcaba 😞

Gcaba : Aibo I didn't touch your sister

Skhalo : Why was she here?

Gcaba : I don't know she followed me

Nka : Lies 😏

Msizi : Nkanyezi 😏

Nka : Maybe Nandi can change my brother who knows an little fam 😏

Gcaba : uyanya I will not be changed thank you

Skhalo : That my sister yol are talking about pervs

Sonke : Uncle what is that?

He said looking at the back of Skhalo there was a gun

Skhalo : What?

Sonke : Is that a gun?

Nka : Yeye 😏

Skhalo : Tseg Nka 🤔...um No....yes it's not a real gun

Sonke : You know am old right? An I also saw the one that is in Uncle Meh's room

Gcaba : You have been sneaking around my room?

Sonke : No

Skhalo : Whether you old or not that doesn't mean anything this is not a gun an don't even dare tell your mother about this she will kill us

Gcaba : Say that again

Sonke : I w....

Msizi's phone rang an he picked it up

Msizi : Sure

Aya : Leave that house it's under attack

Msizi : Wh....

They heard glasses breaking an a loud bang coming from the outside an when they tried to attack back something stopped them someone was on the floor an it's not them but "Him" 💔

Insert 17 

Gcaba : Shit am dead

Skhalo : The pulse is still there?

He said that with his eyes closed cause he was afraid at what if he's dead what will become of him in Nandile's eyes 😞....Gcaba felt suffocating cause if he agreed for Sonke to leave none of this would have happened he was like a dead man so he rushed outside an saw two man hiding under the tree that was near the gate he took out both his guns an aimed at them two bullets an they were down, another shot came right at him but missed so he hid guns were blazing at him so he just hid for that moment after that he got out an shot at them with no care of dying cause if Nandile find out that her Son was shot she will hate him an she will blame for him for all of this, so his mind was not at what he is doing, his mind was occupied with a lot of things so four man were down he than heard a car driving away so he rushed to their bodies searching for evidence maybe but he found nothing so he took out his phone an called his IT guy Ayanda who answered on the third ring

Gcaba : Who was it?

Ayanda : Your Cousin he knew that you were going to attack his shipment so he sent people to distract you

Gcaba : The shipment? They done with it?

Ayanda : Yes

Gcaba : SHIT 😡 who fuckin told him about this?

Ayanda : I don't know

Gcaba : We have a spy

Ayanda : Maybe not, I mean your cousin always knew that if he plays in your territory he will get burned so that's why he came prepared

Gcaba : I want a meeting Ayanda this is not over

Ayanda : Bo....

Gcaba : What?

Ayanda : It seems like your cousin is here to stay

Gcaba : What do you mean stay?

Ayanda : I will show you on our meeting

Gcaba : Okay another thing I need these bodies disposed

Ayanda : On it

Gcaba dropped the call and went inside and found Skhalo on the floor defeated and what ran to his mind is that Sonke is dead

Gcaba : Nka

Nka : He's unconscious

Gcaba : The bullet?

Msizi : We have to rush him to the hospital it's bad Gcaba really bad, the bullet has poison

Gcaba : You can take him to the hospital I will have to deal with Nandile

Skhalo : No I will

Gcaba : You won't manage it look at you, go and be with Sonke I'll deal with this

Gcaba was trying to act strong but he was so angry and sad at the same time because he really loved the young man 😞😞 and he wishes nothing bad to happen to him

Gcaba

I've never been so scared in my life, one minute we laughing and after that guns are blazing not only did they blaze but they managed to make me feel weak in my knees 😞 my mind is racing I may be an honest man and all that shit but how will I tell Nandile that her son was shot? How do I tell her that I am the leader of the gang? How do I fuckin tell her that it's my fault that Sonke is shot? How do I begin to tell her that I love that kid like he's my own but I couldn't protect him? Am so shattered in a way that I wish I could just run away and be a coward just for once am tired of being strong and pretending like my life is all sweet and perfect but behind the walls it's a different story, I was driving to Nandile's house like a maniac I had my gun with me I don't even know why I have it.... My phone rang and it was Skhalo so I answered the phone

Me : Skhalo

Skhalo : We in the hospital and doctors are dealing with him

Me : Any news?

Skhalo : No we still waiting, are you managing?

Me : Am on my way there

Skhalo : I guess I'll see you just now

Me : Sure

Skhalo : You got this Gcaba

Me : Yeah

I hung up the phone and finally I was in front of the gate so I got out of the car to the house I knocked and Sane opened the door for me

Me : Can I come in?

Sane : Yes you can 😊

I wish I could return the smile but my mind is racing and nothing is making any sense

Me : Is she in?

Sane : Nandile?

Me : Yeah

Sane : In the lounge

We walked to the lounge and I found her with Zama and they looked at me like I was crazy it is when I noticed I was only wearing a vest, shorts and flip flops I don't usually go out like this, my mind was just not right

Zama : Is everything okay?

Me : Can we talk?

I said looking at Nandile who stood up and came to me

Ndile : Are you okay?

Me : Private

Zama : We can go upstairs Sane?

Sane : Yeah sure

Both girls went upstairs and I was left with Nandile so I took the gun and placed it on the table I saw her face changing

Me : No no I just wanna be comfortable

Ndile : You scaring me, where is Sonke is he outside?

Me : Um so w... I...

I've never been so speechless all my life 😞 never been so scared to hurt someone's heart like this

Ndile : Calm down an talk to me

Me : There was a break in

Ndile : Where?

Me : In my flat an something bad happened

Ndile : What do you mean?

Me : So um it was me, Skhalo an the gents we were getting ready for work since I told you that I will bring Sonke back later, so we were attacked an...

Ndile : Is Skhalo and Sonke okay?

Me : Th...

I stood up an paced up an down cause I know shit is about to hit the fan the lion I've been building these days will eat me alive today

Me : Skhalo is okay

Ndile : if... Where is my son?

Me : He was s....this is what you must know Nandile I would never wish anything bad to happen to that young man

Ndile : Where is he?

Me : He got shot

Nandile looked at me blankly like she's waiting for me to say am joking well am not joking, she looked at the gun that was on the table and back at me, right that moment I fell in love with the fire that was about to come out right now, I looked at her and she was not moving I know one move from her something will happen so I will embrace myself

Ndile : What did you just say?

Me : He's in the hospital

She moved forward to where I was standing and I just stood there

Ndile : Bitch you didn't say my son was shot 😞

Me : Actually I did

Within a blink of an eye the gun was in her hands, I knew she wanted me to feel the pain that his son is feeling an if that makes her happy so be it

Ndile : Why?

Me : I don't know

Ndile : YOU DON'T KNOW? 😞

Me : Yes

Ndile : YOU DON'T KNOW HUH?

The gun went off an I felt my arm becoming heavy the pain was not bearable but if this makes her happy so be it, I looked at her she dropped the gun an cried now I know she's crying for my arm other than her son 😞

Zama : The hell Ndile 😬

Zama said that coming from upstairs with Sane, Ndile looked at me with guilty eyes an I don't want that from her, I want her to be fierce an I want the fire she have to remain in her right now it's no time to be weak, my arm is also not giving me an justice but I can hold on

right now it's not about me

Ndile : Am so sorry I...

Me : I think we should go

Ndile : Am just not ready 😬

Me : Come here

Nandile walked up to me an she hugged me

Zama : What's wrong?

Me : Can you get her jacket Zama please

Sane : What the hell is wrong?

Me : Meet me outside.....Nandile we have to go

Ndile : Am so sorry

She said that holding me tight an that broke my heart cause am the one who is suppose to be saying sorry not her

Me : Listen to me I want you to be strong right now, stop with all this am sorry your son needs to you more than me, I promise you I will find the person who shot him, for now let's go to the hospital

Nandile walked out leaving me feeling like an ass

Zama : Your arm Gcaba

Me : I can handle it, can you drive?

Zama : Sure, Sane can you lock the door an let's go

I walked to my car an found her at the back I joined her she was crying so I pulled her to me, shw rested her head on my shoulder we drove off

Zama : Where to?

Me : Let me call Skhalo

I took out my phone an called Skhalo

Skhalo : Sure

Me : Can you talk to Zama

Skhalo : Okay

I gave the phone to Zama an they spoke on the other hand

Nandile was so broken an so am I... 💔

✘

✘

✘

✘

✘

(Only Gcaba's Pov for this Insert)

We arrived at the hospital and we went inside my hand was giving me troubles we saw Skhalo and he came to us and hugged his sister

Zama : Can somebody tell me what's going on?

Nka : Sonke was shot

Zama : What? Skhalo?

Skhalo : There was a break in

Zama : Oh my God 😞

Sane : Is he okay? 😞😞

Skhalo : The doctors are still dealing with him

Nka : Your hand

Me : Yeah Msizi?

Nka : In the operation room

Me : Who will attend me?

Sane : I can only if they allow me

Me : Yeah you can come with me

We went to a ward, well Msizi owns this hospital so that's why I do as I please, Sane was dealing my wound

Sane : So how are you?

Me : Am good

Sane : I can help take care of your arm till it get healed

Me : No I'll manage

Sane : Come on I know you can't manage with only one hand

Me : Actually I can

Sane : Why are you playing hard to get? Or is it because of Nandile?

Me : What about Nandile? Are you almost done?

Sane : Yes.... As I was saying Nandile is demaged an she's not ready for a relationship so I was thinking since I am available so why not use me

Me : Am not interested

Sane : Gcaba I'll make it worth your while

Me : Still not interested can you finish up please I want to go an check on everyone

Sane : By everyone you mean Nandile?

Me : Obviously

She frowned I mean what the hell is wrong with this chick...after a while we were done so we went back to the others an I found an unpleasant surprise

Me : What is he doing here Nkanyezi?

Nqaba : Thembela (Gcaba clan name)

Me : What are you doing here?

This is him the cousin I hate with everything in me, I resent him in a way that by just looking at him I just wish to kill him or just burn him cause I despise him 😡 I pushed him aside

Nqaba : Whoa what the hell is wrong with you?

Me : You asking me what the hell is wrong? Nqaba you just attacked me an now you here trying to play the nice card on me

Nqaba : Attack?

Me : Don't play dumb with me you shot a young boy with your stupidity

Nqaba : Who's the young boy?

Me : He's her son

Nqaba looked at Nandile and back at me

Nqaba : Who is she to you?

Me : A friend

Nqaba : What was her son doing at your house?

Me : None of your business

Nqaba : Is my cousin in love

Me : I don't have time for this nonsense am not your friend, let me warn you if you don't leave right now I will not be responsible for killing you

His smile changed into fear, I don't get how this dick can act innocent in front of me than plan my death behind my back I just don't get it

Nqaba : Come on Mbuso (Gcaba clan name) I will never betray you like that, I wonder why you always put the blame on me like everytime an I wonder why things happen when am around cause you'll blame me...

Me : It's because you are the cause of everything

Nqaba : Thembela why can't you believe me I would never do that to you, You my role model Gcaba an I don't why can't you see that someone is setting me up here, why would I attack?

Me : Because you knew that were going to still your shipments

Nqaba : Shipments? What are you on about? I don't illegal staff Gcaba you should know that, fine your father has asked to do one or two illegal favours but that doesn't make me the kingpin of the gang

Me : If it not you than who? An who told you where we are?

Nqaba : Nka told me, Mkhuse is the one planning your death

Me : He's not around how can he be the one behind this don't make me a fool 😞

Nqaba : Mkhuse is around

Me : What? He didn't tell me that 🤔😊

Nqaba : He came with me...why didn't he tell you that he's coming?

Me : Mkhuse would never do that maybe he wanted to surprise me

Nqaba : I hope one day you'll see that Mkhuse is not what you think he is an that day you'll be really surprised...between me an you we know who came to you for business an you denied him an we both know that this is the second time denying him business with you

Nqaba left me standing there, why would Mkhuse betray me like that? We were always close when we were young although he was such a jerk sometimes but he was a good cousin to me....I went back to the others

Me : Still nothing?

Nka : No we still waiting

I went to sit next to Nandile who was staring into space

Me : I am so sorry I know whatever I say right now is not gonna help cause I mean it all my fault....

Ndile : Can you shut up!!

Me : Mmmm

Ndile : Am sorry I wanna hear what the hell is wrong with my son

Me : I understand come here

She came close to me an rested her head on my shoulder so I held her so tight

Ndile : Am still angry at all of you Melusi, cause if I left with my son none of this would have happened

Me : I know

Ndile : I need a shoulder to cry on that doesn't mean I forgive you, saying sorry for shooting you doesn't mean I forgive you I actually hate you right now 🤔💔 an I hate that my son got to know you

That really broke my heart but am not gonna show

Me : I hear you

Ndile : Now shut it with all the sorries you are giving me 🤔

I kept quiet at least I give her comfort, if the little guy wakes up I will leave them alone cause I don't want her to blame me more, my life spells danger so I don't want to welcome people into that world, Nandile is like a sister that I don't wanna hurt an that little man is like a son that I don't want ro disappoint so when he wakes up I will just leave them an go back to New York while on my thought I looked up an saw Mkhuse the other cousin of mine

Zama : WHAT ARE YOU DOING HERE? 😞

Me : Mkhuse 🤔

Nandile looked up an felt her holding me more like asking for protection what the hell is going on? 😞 an Sane was also terrified what the hell is going on here? 😞🤔 on the other hand Mkhuse was looking at me an Nandile an I saw anger that was soon replaced by a fake smile.... 🤔 who are you Mkhuse
Gcaba? 🤔

Insert 18 😞

Narrated

Gcaba : Mkhuse what are you doing here?

Mkhuse : Came to check on my cousin

Nandile wiggled herself from Gcaba and stood up she was so angry and felt betrayed 😞

Ndile : I WANT ALL OF YOU TO LEAVE

Zama : N...

Ndile : EVERYONE I WANT TO BE ALONE 😞

Skhalo : N....

Ndile : Now please 😞

Gcaba wanted to get to the bottom of this so he was not going anywhere, everyone left but Mkhuse didn't go

Mkhuse : Can we talk Ndile

Gcaba looked at Nandile and back at Mkhuse wondering what do they both have 😞

Ndile : If you know what's good for Sambulo you will leave me in peace same applies to you Melusi 😞

Sambulo walked away and decided that he will come back later cause he really need to talk to Nandile, Gcaba didn't go cause he wanted to know what's happening

Gcaba : Talk to me

Ndile : Talk to you 😊 ain't you the one who made me a fool all this while you knew that you Sambulo's cousin the same person who abu....

Gcaba : Carry on

Ndile : No I think it best if you leave us alone now not when my son wakes up

Gcaba : Am not going anywhere Nandile until you tell me what's the hell is going on

Ndile : I won't say anything

Gcaba : That means we will stay like this until you talk 🤔

Ndile : Mxm

Ndile kept quiet an looked the other way but Gcaba was not going anywhere cause he wanted to know what the hell is going on

Gcaba : You know right that I won't be going anywhere

Ndile : Can you leave me alone Gcaba

Gcaba : I won't an you know that so don't even try to tell me that

Ndile : I don't want you here Gcaba, you've caused so much already an now you here telling me what I don't want to hear

Gcaba : Nandile listen to me I don't want it to be like am forcing you to tell me what's wrong but I wanna be there for you fine they may have made you feel like you not worth it but you worth everything so please talk to me am here for you but if you ready to talk I won't force you to talk 😞

Gcaba and Ndile kept quiet for like three minutes, Ndile was just thinking about what Gcaba said indeed she felt unworthy because of Sambulo and she didn't trust any guy around her so for Gcaba to always hit where it hurt everytime it's quite amazing to her

Ndile : Sambulo is not a good guy

Gcaba :

Ndile : Are you listening?

Gcaba : Yes

Ndile : Um he was the one who abused me

Gcaba : Abuse?

Ndile couldn't see his reaction cause it was like he's not angry but deep down Gcaba was angry just that he can't show his emotions

Ndile : He raped me, He pinned me on the wall, he shot me I was in ICU for 1 month without waking up, He did a lot of things always lowering my self esteem like always 😞 he....

The doctor came to them defeated so Gcaba pulled Ndile up although he was no longer here but also pinning Mkhuse on the wall too

Gcaba : Doc?

Doc : Um am looking for Nandile Zikhali

Ndile : I am

Doc : Can I have a word with you?

Nandile looked at Gcaba and wiped her tears away then she took his hand cause she was afraid of what the doctor will say


Ndile : You can talk he's also more important in Sonke's life

Doc : I actually have bad news for you ma'am

Ndile : Oh Boy 💔😞

Gcaba : Can you tell me alone?

Doc : If she agrees

Gcaba looked at Nandile and she nodded because she was not ready to hear what the doctor has to say, Gcaba pulled her to him and they hugged after that he gently pulled out and walked away with the doctor, Nandile was so afraid of receiving bad news that will make her hate Gcaba because if anything happens to Sonke she will hate him After a while Gcaba came out from the doctor's office fuming but more heart broken he went to Ndile who stood up and looked at the defeated Gcaba

Ndile : Is he....is he okay?

Gcaba : Is he the father?

Ndile : Huh?

Gcaba : Is Mkhuse the father of Sonke?

Ndile : Y.. Yes


Gcaba : An... An he.... Ndile....

Ndile : What's wrong Gcaba you scaring me

Gcaba : Can I take you to my flat

Ndile : Melusi please tell me what's wrong with my baby?

Gcaba : Please

Nandile didn't want to go with Sambulo to the house but she knew that she'll end up going because of how stupid is Gcaba, they went to his car he was not talking at all cause he was so angry inside, he wanted to kill someone, he was so heart broken more like Sonke being his ChildNdile was so dying to hear what's wrong with her child but Gcaba was not having it his tears were so near but he won't let them fall not when Nandile is looking 

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

After a while they were inside the house

Ndile : Gcaba it okay now tell me what's the hell is wrong with my son

Gcaba : Ndile can you sit down

Ndile : TELL ME!!

Gcaba : He's gone, Sonke is no more Ndile he's no more

Nandile felt everything going at a slow pace an she wanted to scream out loud but she didn't believe this so she asked again

Ndile : Melusi Gcaba what did you just say?

Gcaba : He's gone

Ndile : He's.... He's dead?

Gcaba : Yes

Ndile : WHY AM I HERE?

Gcaba : I knew you were gonna go crazy at the hospital kant they are still busy with him

Ndile : Gcaba my ba... My baby is no more 🤔🤔

Nandile kneeled down cause she may have went through everything that happened to her but losing her son, her son the person who she loved with everything in her, the person she wished nothing to happen to him now he's gone an she blamed herself for trusting a guy with her son's life now look he's gone 🤔🤔 she just screamed an Gcaba tried to touch her

Ndile : Don't touch me Gcaba 🤨

She screamed an Gcaba didn't care so he just held on her she fought but at the end she let go an cried like never before she was so hurt 😞😞 Gcaba didn't know how to console someone but he's willing to try an comfort her

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Skhalo took his phone an did something he should have done a long timw ago, he called his mother cause Msizi told him the news about Sonke, so his mother answered on the third ring

Mom : Skhalo Baby

Skhalo : M... Mom **sniff**

Mom : Are you well that side love?

Skhalo : No mom your daughter needs you now more than ever

Mom : Zama?

Skhalo : Nandile mama she needs you 😞😞 she lost her son today

The line went dead for like two minutes until Skhalo's mother sobbed loud on the phone cause she couldn't believe her ears, Skhalo's father took the phone cause she couldn't talk she was crying

Dad : We heard an we will come, give us all thw information we will be there tomorrow morning

Skhalo : I will send the information now

Dad : Okay Nyana (son)

Skhalo dropped the call crying cause never in his life would he thought his sister will go through so much pain like she's the old one in the family 😞😞 he blamed himself for not protecting her the way he should have, a knock came through so he went to open an was met by a hug from Zama who was so crying hysterically 😞 so Skhalo returned the hug

Zama : My boy is Gone Skhalo 😞😞

Skhalo : Am sorry Babe am so sorry 😞😞

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Gcaba picked Nandile up to the room cause she cried herself to sleep while putting her down Nandile pulled him close to her and didn't wanna let go

Ndile : Don't go please

Gcaba : Okay I'll wait for you to slee...

Nandile kissed Gcaba an he was amazed by what is going on so he got lost in that moment but remembered that he can't be taking advantage of her cause she's vulnerable he pulled out

Gcaba : We can't

Ndile : Please Gcaba I want something that can take my mind off things

Gcaba : I know I really really do but I can't, I will be right beside you but we not gonna do sex

Ndile : I need it Gcaba I really do

Gcaba : I don't think you need that

Advertisement

you just hurting

Nandile pushed Gcaba down an got on top of him

Ndile : Please 😞

She wanted to take her mind off things an Gcaba was the only solution, Gcaba was tempted but again he didn't want it to be like he's taking advantage of the situation

Gcaba : Nand....

Nandile kissed him while busy touching his mister an that was more like she's screaming "No mercy Gcaba " they kissed an things led to another levels blah blah blah (So you must know I

will post the actual thing when it becomes more special for now you'll only get half of it)

✘

✘

✘

Gcaba woke up and looked at how peaceful is Nandile, he felt more like an ass cause he was suppose to stop the situation that was happening but his feeling led him astray... He woke up and went to do a quick shower in his room after that he wore some shady clothes cause he wanted to go see Mkhuse....He was done getting ready so he went to Ndile's room and kissed her forehead she slightly woke up but Gcaba shushed her back to sleep

Gcaba : Sleep

Ndile slept once again cause it was late at night, so he drove away with so much anger but he's not gonna show it he wanna play his cousin at his own game , his phone rang and it was Skhalo so he answered

Gcaba : Sure

Skhalo : Is she with you?

Gcaba : Yeah

Skhalo : Our parents are coming tomorrow so it best if she comes to my flat

Gcaba : I will tell her tomorrow morning cause she's sleeping

Skhalo : No problem I can come an fetch her

Gcaba : No I'll drop her off myself

Skhalo : Okay

Gcaba : Am sorry man

Skhalo : we will talk in the morning

Gcaba : Sure

Gcaba hung up the phone an thought about the sex they had with Nandile it was filled with emotions, he have never had something like that cause it was always about eat an pass now to have that sad but sensational sex with Nandile it was more of a first time experience for him, he body may have scars an all that but it was more than perfection itself

Gcaba : Come on Gcaba keep your head on the game

He kept on driving until he reached his destination, Mkhuse is afraid of Gcaba but he's more of a person who don't surrender without a fight, Gcaba entered Sambulo's house without knocking, Sambulo looked back an saw Gcaba he thought that maybe he will throw a punch or something but Gcaba did the unthinkable

Gcaba : Do you have a strong drink?

Mkhuse : Yeah come this side

It took Gcaba a lot of strength to avoid the word telling him to kill Sambulo but he didn't want to, Nandile will be the one to put a bullet on this idiot

Mkhuse : I heard Nqaba attacked you

Gcaba : Yeah he did

Mkhuse : Why were you in the hospital? Who got shot?

Gcaba : I got shot

Mkhuse : Oh yeah your arm

Gcaba : Yeah

Mkhuse : Are you okay dude?

Gcaba : Yeah 😊 just angry that yiu didn't tell me you coming this side

Mkhuse : Well it was a short notice

Gcaba : Am just glad you here, I wanted to talk to you about business

Mkhuse : Business?

Gcaba : Yeah um.... I wanted you to do something for me

Mkhuse : What's that?

Gcaba : I want you to traffic something for me

Mkhuse : You wanna do business with me?

Gcaba : Just this once if you help me with this than it shall be the proof to me that you ready to be my partner

Mkhuse : Where am I delivering it?

Gcaba : New York

Mkhuse : Is it a drug?

Gcaba : Yeah something like that

Mkhuse : No problem

Gcaba : So this house all by yourself?

Mkhuse : Used to live with someone

Gcaba : Is it a girl?

Mkhuse : Yeah

Gcaba : Where is she?

Mkhuse : Um yo....

Gcaba's phone rang an it was a number he didn't know so he answered

Gcaba : Sure

Ndile : Where are you?

Gcaba : Am out an about

Ndile : I was worried because of not finding you besides me

Gcaba : Am coming

Ndile : I'll just try to find some sleeping pills in your room

Gcaba : Um okay

Ndile : Are you with a chick there? You sound uneasy

Gcaba : No am with my cousin

Ndile : Sambulo?

Gcaba : No no no...

Ndile : Mxm

Nandile dropped the call an Gcaba gulped down the glass an poured anothee drink an did the same thing after that he looked at Mkhuse who was looking at him

Gcaba : We will talk tomorrow

Mkhuse : Wife calling?

Gcaba : Wife? Nice joke

He walked away leaving Mkhuse pretending to laugh but inside he was dying an wondering why hasn't Nandile told Gcaba who he is? Cause he can't see that Gcaba is coming at him with everything he got

✘

✘

✘

Ꝥ

Next Morning

Gcaba arrived yesterday and found Ndile already sleeping so he just went to his office and was there for the whole night because he couldn't sleep at all 😞 he went to the kitchen and found Ndile drinking some tea and lost in her thoughts she wants to hate Gcaba but she can't. She wants to blame someone but she can't because she feels like this is her fault she lost her son

Gcaba : Morning

Ndile : ****sniff**** Morning

Gcaba : Your parents are coming so it's better if I take you to Skhalo's flat

Ndile : Okay

Nandile was afraid to meet her parents but they are here so she has to face her fears because one of her fears has been laid in front of her on a silver platter 😞😞 which is looking her son so she wiped her tears quickly and looked at Gcaba who was also looking at her

Ndile : Am sorry about....

Gcaba : Water under the bridge...come here

Gcaba pulled her to him an they hugged

Gcaba : You may be going through this but I want you to know that am here for you an am not going anywhere as long as you need me here what happened yesterday won't happen again okay? Am sorry if it felt like am taking advantage of you it won't happen again so now be a good girl an go upstairs bath an come meet me downstairs so that we can go to Skhalo's flat okay?

Nandile pulled out an walked away but stopped in the middle

Ndile : I left home when I was 16 years old because of a guy who told me all the good words that I needed to hear, he promised me heaven on earth an I felt like the queen of the castle of some sort, he gave me an opportunity that I didn't wanna lose which is to study at UJ an I abandoned my own family because of that, little did I know that he wanted me all to himself

Nandile turned an looked at Gcaba who was looking at her blankly he was fuming inside

Ndile : He started showing me his true colors controlling me, controlling what I wear an what I do like everything, He started with One slap after that he used to kick me 🤢 pull me by my hair an didn't care at all if I get hurt in the process, he lowered my self esteem Melusi, he made me feel like he's the only man who can see good in me an I believed it all 💔🤢 I was a fool... The last straw was when Nka an some chick came into the house an he said I should pretend to be his sister 🤢 I did Gcaba than that girl asked me about my brother like how is he... I thought of my biological brother an cried that's when it started an ended cause after that meeting he kicked me, raped me an did a lot of things that I never thought I'll have to face in my life after that he vanished an left me to die but Zama found me cause I sent her an sms that made him angry to a point that he shot me, hw left me pregnant with Sonke, I was so happy that at least I found something more precious in this sick relationship an now he's gone am like that broken girl I was back than, I feel so alone Melusi an am so scared to face the world alone like this 🤢🤢

Gcaba : Look at me

Nandile looked up an stared at Gcaba while sobbing

Gcaba : Can't you see me?

Ndile : I can

Gcaba : How can you say you alone when am here

Ndile : He's your Cousin Gcaba so it changes everything

Gcaba : Ngangihlanyeli wena (Don't act crazy here)

Ndile : You were with him yesterday Gcaba

Gcaba : Yey ngangihlanyisi wena Nandile (Don't make me angry) That doesn't mean anything I loved that kid Nandile so I won't betray him like that he fuckin at.... He was not suppose to die like this am sorry I know it my fault an I promise you I will find who did this an I will kill them with everything in me even if it means it takes me 10 years to do it but at the end they will die 😞 I promise you

Ndile : A promise is a promise

Gcaba : I Promise

Nandile looked at Gcaba and Gcaba back at Nandile an that was a promise Gcaba made to Nandile an he will have to keep it.....It a tie in their bond

Gcaba : Another thing I'll always be here for you.... Always!!

Insert 19 ?

Nandile

My heart is so heavy I don't know if am going or am just walking in the same path over and over again because of what happened to my son 💔 I miss him, I feel like am betraying him by being with Gcaba cause this is all his fault 😞😞 but I know my son would have forgave Gcaba cause a break in can happen to anyone 😞 am still in his flat I know a lot happened we slept like WE HAD SEX 😞 but that's the story for another right now I just wanna get ready an go see my parents than we can go an see my son decide everything after that....I went downstairs all ready an found Gcaba with Nka in the kitchen this guy is always eating 🍷♀ I wonder why is Nka here 😊

Nka : Nandi wam

Me : Hey

He came to me an we hugged to be honest I don't trust Nka cause him an Sambulo pretended like they didn't know each

other like why would Sambulo say am his sister to him it doesn't make sense at all so I just don't trust him at all

Nka : How are you feeling?

Me : Good

Nka : Nandi am so sorry that you had to find out like this that me an Sambulo are cousins

Me : Why did you lie that night?

Gcaba : What night?

Nka : Um we will talk some other time....I have to rush an see Cleo to explain everything

Gcaba : You can run but at the end we will have to talk

Nka : Sure

He left in a hurry I really don't trust Nka guys don't get me wrong but my feelings are so uneasy towards him 😞 Gcaba gave me a stare I don't know if his eyes are sending out a message

Me : What?

Gcaba : Tell me about that night?

Me : Can we go my parents are probably waiting for me

Gcaba : Well they will be this side by 3pm cause there was a delay

Me : I don't wanna talk about it

Gcaba : Nka knows you were in a relationship with Sambulo?

Me : Yes he knew

Gcaba : Why did he bring him to the hospital than?

Me : Can you leave it?

Gcaba : No I won't leave it I want to know

Me : Can you drop it? What I want is for Sambulo to stay the hell away from me.... Now there's linking me to him don't get me wrong I loved my s...

Gcaba : You don't have to explain I know what you mean

Me : Melusi can I ask you something?

Gcaba : Sure

Me : Was it really a break in?

Gcaba : Yes

Me : From someone you don't know?

Gcaba : Am not sure but I'll find out cause there are cameras in this place

Me : Please do I want closure

Gcaba : Once you get it?

Me : If I should be crazy I will

Gcaba : 😊 You know how sexy you are if you talk like this?

Me : Is that a compliment

Gcaba : Nah just stating facts

Me : Whatever

Gcaba : Can we go?

Me : Yes we can go

As we were about to walk out on the door we were met by Sambulo an a guy I met at the hospital am not sure what is his name, my mood just turned sour 🤔

Gcaba : Can you guys wait for me I'll be back

Sambulo : Can I talk to Nandile?

Gcaba looked at me an I shook my head

Gcaba : Fine you can talk to her

Me : You must be crazy

Gcaba : Nqaba meet me outside

Me : Melusi please don't leave me alone with this dog

Sambulo : Please Nandile

Me : Gcaba?

Gcaba : I see you not ready we can go... Gents see yol just now

Nqaba : Will be drinking your whisky

Gcaba : Shoot to kill

Nqaba : I don't care 😁😁

I walked out leaving them laughing, I don't know what was
Gcaba thinking, I felt him coming from the behind

Me : Wwuuuu I nearly came an grab you c....

When I turned I saw Sambulo, you must be joking what is he doing here now? To finish me off? 😬 am scared an angry at the same time

Sambulo : Can we talk?

Me : Leave me alone

Sambulo : I still love you

Me : You must be crazy, you killed that Naive Nandile a long time ago so I won't be bullied by you sorry

Sambulo : So you dating my cousin now?

Me : No we not dating however it wouldn't be a bad idea

Sambulo : Don't dare me

Me : the time where you bullied me is gone now so stop trying whatever the shit you tryna do 😬

Sambulo : I know I still scare you, a part of me will always be in your head Nandile

He came closer to me an I felt like am going to suffocate am die right that moment

Sambulo : You will always be mine

He tried to grab my waist but something snatched him from behind and after that I saw a punch going straight in his eye he fell down while groaning

Gcaba : Not in my place Mkhuseleli 😞

Sambulo : sorry boy

Gcaba : Touch her again and you will see what am made off 🤔

Sambulo : Sure

I ran straight to the car cause I've never been so scared like for the past 8 years 😞 Gcaba followed me cause I felt him turning me around to face him

Gcaba : You not gonna show him your weakness Nandile

Me : He abused me Gcaba

Gcaba : So what? You always gonna feel this scared because of that?

Me : He raped me

Gcaba : I know

Me : He left scars in my body

Gcaba : I also know that, Nandile that's what makes you this beautiful and this strong woman I see, Listen I know that Mkhuse has made you feel like you nothing, he made you his puppet by thinking he can rule you but I want you to show him that you are your own person and what he did to you will not hold you down

Me : It's not easy Melusi

Gcaba : That's why am here to make it easy, Sonke may have left you but you not alone that's what am sure off

Me : 🙄💔

Gcaba : Don't cry okay? How about I buy you some Ice cream?

Me : I still have to see my son Gcaba

Gcaba : You can't see him

Me : What?

I wiped my tears away what is this man saying? I can't see who? Is he kidding me?

Gcaba : I mean you can't see him today they are busy with him

Me : Since yesterday?

Gcaba : He went in for an operation so Msizi said that they are still busy with some tests so that we can be able to send the information to the cops

Me : Cops?

Gcaba : Yeah cops for arresting the people who are involved in this

Me : Do you think am a fool? Like when you look at me you see a fool?

Gcaba : Why?

Me : I know you a gangster Gcaba ?

Gcaba : I don't know what you talking about

He left me standing there an entered the car I jist felt defeated an got inside the car too, looked outside cause he's making me angry

Gcaba

How can I tell her like right now that am a gangster, I mean his son just died because of me 😞 how can I tell her that? She'll hate me I know

Me : Am not a gangster Nka an Skhalo may be involved in a gang of some sort, as for me I do have a gun but am no gangster

Ndile : An you want me to believe all of that?

Me : That's your choice Babe

Ndile : Don't call me that 😊

Me : 😊

We drove in silent after a while we got inside the gate where Skhalo lives

Me : I will see you

Ndile : When?

Me : Funeral

Ndile : You not coming back?

Me : No your parents will be here in no time so I don't want to intrude

Ndile : You not intruding well can I call you at least I mean Gcaba you the only thing that makes sense to me right now, I know I should be hating you but I can't an even if I try I just can't

Me : Why?

Ndile : I don't know

Me : You can call

Ndile : I will do that

Me : I have to go before your parents arrives

Ndile : Yeah let me get out

Me : You got no bags so I won't accompany you

Ndile : No problem bye

She got out of my car an I looked at her until she got inside the Skhalo's flat than I drove off listening to some music an my phone rang I answered without checking who's calling

Me : Sure

Caller : Gcaba I need your help **Hard breath**

Me : Who are you?

Caller : Sane

Me : Where you at?

Sane : Am in the hiding

Me : Why?

Sane : Let us say your cousin didn't just abuse Nandile alone

Me : So why are you in a hiding?

Sane : Because he...he... Please Gcaba I really need your help

Me : What help?

Sane : I need your protection I know that you are protecting Nandile from him so I also want that

Me : Am not protecting Nandile cause she's not that scared

Sane : Believe me she is Gcaba, that man can kill your soul an he doesn't care about anyone but himself

Me : Send me your location I'll send my boys to fetch you

Sane : Thanks Gcab...

I hung up my phone I wonder what is this girl up to but whatever it is I will find out

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

After a while I was inside my flat an Sambulo was lying in the couch, Nqaba was in the kitchen so I went to him

Me : What are you having?

Nqaba : Some food I found in the fridge

Me : Left some?

Nqaba : Left some? Who are you an what the hell did you do to my cousin?

Me : If it cooked by her than am not worried

Nqaba : Do you trust this chick? I mean you don't easily trust anyone

Me : Well I do

Nqaba : Is it love?

Me : No absolutely not

Nqaba : Really?

Me : I'll kick your ass

Nqaba : 😊

Me : I still hate you

Nqaba : For something that I didn't do

Me : Who a...

Sambulo : Gcaba

I turned an looked at this cousin I don't even know anymore

Advertisement

he's the one I trusted but now I don't an I hate him so much that I wish death upon him, I don't even want him here in my house as we speak but I will pretend as if everything is cool cause I want him to die a slow painful death knowing that he killes his own son just because of greed

Me : Mkhuse

Sambulo : She's my ex

Me : Mm?

Sambulo : Nandile she's my ex

Me : Oh

Nqaba : His Nandile?

Sambulo : Is she yours? I still love her bra an I want us to make amends

Me : Why are you telling me?

Sambulo : Because I cab see that she loves you an I can see how over protective you are over her

Me : nobody is in love here Sambulo am just protecting her because her brother is working for me

Sambulo : Gcaba come on man I love that chick fine I may have done a lot of things to her but seeing her again made me realise that I never stopped loving her can you please help me get her back, she understands you so I know she can listen to you

Me : Am not involving myself Sambulo

Nqaba : Me neither

He killed his son so what makes him think that I will ever help him get Nandile back 😊 I'll rather have her be in a loveless relationship with me than be with this jerk 😞 He looked at me defeated well I don't give two shit about it 😊

Narrated

Nandile was with her brother when a knock came through, Skhalo went to open the door and found his parents at the door, His mother couldn't wait to meet her daughter so she rushed inside and found Nandile waiting for them with a scared face, her mother just pulled Nandile to her embrace, Nandile just sobbed loudly cause she missed this and now she gets to have it under this circumstance 😞

Mom : Oh my baby 😞

Ndile : Am sorry Mama 😞

They hugged for a longest time and when Nandile looked behind her mother she saw her father and he was so angry not at her only but also at the guy who took her away from them, he will pretend as if he's okay but once the funeral pass he will spit fire he pulled his hand for her to come to him so she ran to him and they hugged he was so sad that he finds his daughter this broken

Ndile : Am so glad you here daddy 🤔❤️

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

After a while they were seating in the lounge drinking tea

Mom : How are you baby?

Ndile : I don't know mom

Mom : How old was he?

Ndile : 7 soon to be 8

Dad : He was old, so where is he right now?

Ndile : The doctors still have him

Dad : we need to go there an check

Skhalo : Gc... I mean the doctor said that it will be best if we check on him tomorrow...take him to the mortuary

Mom : It a boy?

Ndile : Yes

Mom : I missed you, I missed so much Ndindi ka mama 😞

Ndile : I missed you too I was afraid to come back home

Mom : Home is always open Nandile you know that

Ndile : A lot has happened in my life so I was so scared that maybe you will turn me away

Dad : Turn you away?

Mom : Baba not now please 😞😞

Dad : Can I be excused?

Ndile : Dad am sorry I know th...

Dad : We'll be outside

He stood up and walked out cause he was not ready to hear sorry from Nandile he's so angry at this moment

Mom : He'll come around

Ndile : I dissapointed him 😞

Mom : Don't worry he's just angry but he loves you that what you must know

Ndile : I know

Mom : Am sorry about my grandchild I know the pain of losing a child so I don't even wish it on anyone else especially if that person is my child

Ndile : He was my life 😞 when I had him my life was a mess but he fixed it by loving me an showed me that am still worth so much more than tears

Mom : What happened? Why didn't you come back home?

Nandile I was so worried sick about you an I felt like the world has turned against me I mean we were okay I did everything for you, I sacrificed everything for you but you met someone with so much more an you turned your back from your own family

Ndile : I was a fool mama an I regret every moment of it

Mama : What happened?

Ndile : A lot happened mama 😞 a lot

Mama : Wanna talk about it?

Ndile : Maybe later

Mama : Okay just know that I love you okay?

Ndile : I love you too

Skhalo : What about me?

Mom : I love you too my boy 😊 come to mama

Skhalo went to his sister and mother they hugged, Nandile was afraid of telling her mother the truth about what happened in her life, she knew that her father is dangerous so if she tells her mother everything will be a mess there would be two funerals cause Sambulo would just be killed by her father 😞

✘

✘

✘

✘

In Gcaba's flat his boys came with Sane

Gcaba : You can leave her here and make sure that you surround this place I don't care how but do it make sure that no one sees you, right Sotho?

Sotho : Sure sure boss

Gcaba : Did you search her?

Sotho : Yes she's empty

Gcaba : Phone?

Sotho : Took it to Ayanda

Gcaba : Sharp you can leave

Sotho an the guys left Gcaba with Sane

Gcaba : So?

Sane : Can I have some water?

Gcaba : Sure

Sane cat walked to the kitchen while thinking about how will she make him love her or how will she make him sleep with her cause that will be a done deal, so she came back with a bottle of water found Gcaba waiting for her

Sane : So is Nandile here?

Gcaba : No she went to her brother's house

Sane : Oh it just me an you?

Gcaba : Yeah so let's start by hearing what are you running away from?

Sane : Sambulo made me his puppet

Gcaba : Mmmm

Sane : I always do whatever he wants me to do, but now am tired an I don't even want anything to do with him

Gcaba : How come you an Nandile friends?

Sane : He was the one who told to be her friend cause he wanted her an he said I must pretend as if am his sister cause he wanted her

Gcaba : Why didn't you warn her? You knew that Sambulo was a danger in her life but you chose to ignore it why?

Sane : He would have killed me Gcaba, I didn't wanna lose my life

Gcaba : Oh I don't trust you Sane an nothing you say will make me trust if you can sell someone you call a friend to a monster like Sambulo, I don't even understand why you called me cause you could have ran away an never came back, am not the right guy to protect you

Sane : I know you can gcaba

She walked close to him an Gcaba just looked at her

Sane : I can even make it worth your while if you left me

Sane said that touching Gcaba's chest

Gcaba : What are you doing?

Sane : I want you

Sane said that getting close to him an he pushed her away from him even though his need for a woman arised but he couldn't

Gcaba : ****clear throat**** I don't want you so if you stay here stay in your lane an I'll also stay in my own lane 🗑 if not I'll be forced to throw you out

Insert 20 🌹

Gcaba

2 Weeks Later

The funeral has passed it was very toxic an Nandile was like losing her mind 😞 I was so hurt cause I can't stop thinking that this is all my fault, Sane is still living with me an I last saw Nandile a week ago her mother is still this side as for her father he left the day after the funeral, he's still angry I don't blame him I mean he last saw his daughter 9 years ago cause he came back to find her not home from the army so I don't blame the old man, Sambulo has beeb ignoring me I don't know why maybe it's because am living with Sane 🤔♀️....I woke up did my morning hygiene than after a while I walked downstairs to find Sane in the kitchen making food her food to be precisely 😊 she's been begging me to eat her food but I don't want to 🤔♀️

Me : Morning

Sane : Hey Gcaba 😊

I went to take some juice in the fridge cause I was so thirsty

Sane : Been meaning to ask you

Me : Mmm

Sane : Your real name?

Me : Just call me Gcaba

Sane : Why? I want to know your name 😊

Me : I said just call me Gcaba

She got frightened an kept on doing what she was doing cause my voice was stern, that's how I shut her up from irritating, my phone rang an I answered it

Me : Hello

Ndile : Am outside

Me : Outside?

Ndile : Am by the door

Me : Come in

Ndile : Please come out... Please

Me : Am coming

I hung up my phone an rushed outside, Sane was talking but I don't even hear what she is saying, I opened the door an found her standing there looking all beautiful an sexy at the same time, this girl never cease to amaze me

Me : Why don't you come in?

Ndile : I wanted to stand here 😊

Me : Come here 😊

I pulled her to me an we hugged, this is getting serious now I mean am not a person of hugs an all that shit but here I am busy hugging a girl I hated the moment I saw her cause she stood up to me 😬 now look at us hugging like we are in a sort of relationship we pulled out from the hug an I looked at her straight in her eyes she smiled 😊

Me : You smell great

Ndile : I feel great

Me : How are you feeling? Like honestly?

Ndile : Am still missing him like every day 😞 I wish to see him smiling, laughing, playing an joking around more especially sulking at me for leaving him behind 😞

She quickly wiped her tears but I stopped her

Me : I want you to face reality if you with me, I want you to always fight your battles if you with me don't hide how you feeling let me walk with you through it all

Ndile : Thanks

Me : Your mother?

Ndile : She's going home today an I wish like I could go home an refresh my mind

Me : Home?

Ndile : Yeah my home

Me : Is that what you want?

Ndile : Yes... No empeleni (actually) I first want closure Meluse I wanna know who killed my son an why

Me : Can we go inside?

Ndile : Is...

Sane : Gca....

Sane said that coming outside and I looked at Ndile her smile changed straight to a frown

Ndile : What is she doing here?

Sane : Am living here

Ndile : Gcaba?

Me : Can I explain everything inside?

Ndile : I can't be in the same room with a person who hated my son in a way she was not even in the funeral

Sane : I wa...

Ndile : I don't wanna hear anything from you Sane

Sane : Says the same person I got abused for

Ndile : I didn't ask you to do that Sane it was your choice

Sane : Like how it was your choice to be abused by Sambulo?

Ndile : You lured me to him cause you knew very well that he's a jerk but other than that It was my choice because I chose a man over my family

Sane : Don't think you smart wena Nandile, am the one who made you what you are today, am the one who was there when you had a breakdown

Advertisement

I was the one who took care of your dead child an this is how you thank me? I didn't go to that funeral because I was scared of the same man who abused me because of your sorry ass, I made you wena Nandile 😞

Nandile just laughed with tears coming out of her face

Ndile : Are you done?

Sane : Yes am done an actually am done with you too

Ndile : Listen to me Sanelisiwe don't you ever again say you made me, I made myself you may have been there when I was breaking down because you were amused right cause you such a soar bitch

Yes Babe spit that fire that what I was shouting inside my heart



Ndile : Busy saying you love me whereas you know that you still holding a grudge for something that I was not aware off an didn't even ask you to do it for me, WeSane I don't know what you think you are but I want to tell you something today Sambulo damaged you an you two actually suits each other more than anything cause you both are mentally ill an need a doctor or someone to punch some sense in yols mind 😞 I so hate how you thought you could use my son for your filthy work, I actually don't envy your pathetic life so don't even think that you own me or you made me cause if you did I would be a dumb just like how you are I....

Sane was like a ticking bomb cause I saw like she wants to slap her so I stopped this

Me : Nandile can you calm down

Sane : Calm down? You really gonna take care of her instead of telling her where to get off

Me : I think you need to find a flat

Sane : What? You can't do that Gcaba

Me : Go pack I will call Ayanda to fix the flat for you

Ndile : Really now?

Me : Nandile not now

Ndile : Not now? Not now Gcaba? You really gonna trust Sane or even keep Sane close to me so that she can call Sambulo to come an finish me

Me : I will not let that happen, Sane go an pack

Sane : Nx

Me : Give me that attitude once again an I'll show you

She walked away an I looked at Nandile she was so angry

Me : Can we go in?

Ndile : No am going home

Me : Please

Ndile : You invited a person who can link me up with Sambulo

Me : I will not let anything happen to you Nandile

Ndile : How will you do that if you not a gangster?

Me : I have my ways

Ndile : Gcaba I can't do this

Me : You can't do what Nandile? Am not asking you to move in with me but I want us to talk

Ndile : I don't wanna talk with you

Me : Why?

Ndile : You surprise me every time Gcaba firstly I heard that the man who broke me is your cousin secondly you are living with a girl who hates me, a girl who sold me to Sambulo

Me : But that doesn't make me a bad person

Ndile : It does

Me : How?

Ndile : BEC... YOU KNOW WHAT STAY THE HELL AWAY FROM ME

Nandile tried to walk away but I stopped her I couldn't let her leave while this angry

Me : Come on Nandile I want us to talk

Ndile : I don't wanna talk

Me : Nandile I do everything you want but you can't talk to me, I mean you wanted me to sleep with you the other day an I did do that cause I wanted to make you feel good now it your turn to make me feel good I just want us to talk

This girl is making me weak in the knee with all her mood swings

Ndile : That's not fair

Me : Life is not fair come let's go in

I pulled her inside my place 😞

Nandile

My life hasn't been good after the funeral, my mother was on my case wanting to know what happened with Sambulo an I couldn't tell her what happened cause I know my father will even plant a bomb in Sambulo's place, not that I don't want him to die, I do just that I want him to cry while dying just like how he made me cry for my life to be not taken away by him....

The right now situation I don't know but I feel so jealous of Gcaba an I don't want any girl to keep on hovering around him and Sane is really testing me 😬 I so hate this girl to even think that she's my friend kant all along she planning my downfall 😬....I know I shouldn't be feeling like this for a boy cause I did promise myself that I will never trust any boy but this guy here is always there to keep me strong an he just keeps me sane

Me : Where are we going?

Gcaba : To my room I know that you don't wanna see Sane

Me : No it's okay we can be in the lounge

Gcaba : No we going to my room

Me : Aibo Melusi

Gcaba : What? 😊 we going to my room finish an klaar

We went to his room an I chose to sit on the couch that was there so he took his phone an called Ayanda cause that what he said, all along am wondering why would Sane want to live with Gcaba it does not make any sense....he was done talking on the phone

Gcaba : So Miss Zikhali what do you wanna eat? I can order some food

Me : I don't wanna eat anything I want you to tell me what happened to my son an who shot him

Gcaba : We were sitting in the lounge joking around as always with my guys an of cause with Sonke too, he was us why do we have gun nje it was a chilled conversation so Msizi's phone rang an he answered I saw him standing up saying "What? " I knew that there's a possibility that we are attacked while thinking about a bullet came through the window while we were screaming like bitchies your son was on the floor fighting for his life an that's when it registered to us that Sonke is shot 😞 I was so angry Nandile in a way that I went out an shot everyone who was still in the yard cause I just thought of you like how would you feel about this cause he's your son an your only son after that the car drove off an I called Ayanda who told me everything like who did this an why

I was now crying cause the pain of losing my son is unbearable 😞 I just feel like the universe is so angry at me

Me : Who an why?

Gcaba : Because of greed an power

Me : Power? What power?

Gcaba : Yeah power from the underworld

Me : What underworld? can you make me understand what you saying

Gcaba : Me an this person Nandile hates each other because am powerful an this person wants to be powerful like me, he wants to do business with me but I don't want to cause he does trafficking of drunks an humans

Me : Who is this heartless person

Gcaba :....

Me : Melusi Gcaba?

Gcaba : Sambulo

I felt my heart closing in an I touched it ,I feel like am gonna have a heart attack

Me : My he... Hea...

After that I don't know what happened cause it was light out from me

Narrated

Gcaba hurried an called Msizi to hurry up while picking up Nandile an putting her in bed

Gcaba : Am sorry I had to do this but you had to know 😞

✘

✘

✘

✘

Sane heard all of this so she rushed to her room an called Sambulo who answered almost immediately

Sambulo : Hello

Sane : Um Sambulo we need to meet an talk

Sambulo : Talk about what?

Sane : What else if it's not Nandile

Sambulo : It about damn I've been waiting for this call Sane
what took you so long

Sane : I want us to make a deal

Sambulo : What deal is that?

Sane : Gcaba

Sam : No Sane

Sane : It either that or nothing Sambulo

Sam : Fine when do you wanna meet?

Sane : Now

Sam : Okay sharp

Sambulo dropped the call happy cause at last he will get what
he wants, Sane took her bags an walked downstairs when she
was about to walk out of the door

Ayanda : Not so fast Missy

Sane turned an it was like in the movies when you turn an see three guys pointing a gun at you an the other one is in between

Ayanda : You not leaving any time soon

Sane : What?

Ayanda : Take her

Sane : Please I'll find my own place to stay

Ayanda : Maybe in hell take her to the warehouse now

Sane : War....Please I didn't do anything

Ayanda : Now madoda

The gents went a picked her up she was screaming an kicking cause she thought that now she will get what she wants 😞 little did she know that there are cameras all over the flat so Ayanda is always on the look

Insert 21 🌹

Gcaba

A promise is a big thing it either you keep it or you break it 😞 I for one never thought that there would be a time where I promise protection to a girl I barely knew, I for one never knew that I would care so much for a girl in a way that am prepared to move mountains for her, I for one never knew that I would hate anything that would bring harm to this girl and her loved one's, I for one would probably have a broken heart because seeing her broken and crying I don't know what happening to me I may just think that maybe it is love but let me prove it to myself first cause what if it's not am just drawn to her that's all? What if in the middle of the process I would hate her and get bored with her but I highly doubt being bored with this girl cause she's the type that makes me weak without even trying, I mean she have no perfect body but I love it so damn much, she looks much better with a make up but too bad cause I love the natural look cause she's cute, am sure some other niggas might think that "Bro you crazy " but bro am I crazy for her? Damn yeah I am and not even ashamed, enough about all these heart express moments 😊 am so worried about Nandile I didn't

mean to scare her off like this but she had to know what we are dealing with here ,Am with Msizi an he's examining her I just wish I could take all the pains she's feeling an put them inside me 😞

Me : Msizi what's wrong? Is she gonna be okay?

Msizi : She had a panic attack man, what the hell happened?

Me : We were just talking about things

Msizi : I think you must not stress her cause she's still mourning

Me : I know

Msizi : She must rest can we talk outside?

Me : Sure

I looked at her one last time an stepped outside with Msizi, we stood at the passage

Me : Talk to me

Msizi : We have the girl

Me : What girl?

Msizi : Sane she's working for Sambulo

Me : What? 😞

Msizi : Am telling you

Me : This bitch... Where is she?

Msizi : Warehouse

Me : I will be there shortly

Msizi : Okay, so how's your mom?

Me : Didn't call her today, you know how she can be I will never hear the end of it

Msizi : I tried to call her

Me : Regarding that issue?

Msizi : Yes I have a solution

Me : I will try my father later don't worry

Msizi : Thank you I will be on my way to the warehouse

Me : Sharp

I walked back to the room why am I even surprised I mean this girl loved Sambulo or whatever so for sure she will do whatever Sambulo says she must do, I will have to fix this problem fast

Ndile : Gc... Gcaba

Me : Am here

I jumped an went to the bed where she was, she tried to stand up but I stopped her an joined her in bed

Me : You need to rest Nandile

Ndile : He killed my son 😞

She cried once again an I want to punch myself right now 💔

Me : Don't cry, am sorry that I had to tell you like this

Ndile : I hate that dog Gcaba he killed my son 😞 I hate you for bringing him back to our lives, if it wasn't for you my son would still be alive Melusi, you an your cousin killed my son I don't care what you say but it's true, I asked you Gcaba if this was really a robbery an you said Yes...

Me : Ye...

Ndile : SHUT UP GCABA, THIS WAS NO ATTACK IT WAS INTENTIONALLY! 😞

Me : Nandile....

Ndile : I want you far away from me as possible cause believe me I would just choke you to death

Me : Nand....

Ndile : GET OUT GCABA OUUUUT! 😞😞

Nandile was angry and not even a word I say would make her change her mind about her hating me, I knew that this day would come where the girl I care about would go ape on me because of this one mistake that costed her a son 😞 I walked away leaving her crying again 💔 but "A Promise Is A Promise " I have to keep it true

Nandile

Hate is a big word and it actually something that you feel inside your heart for that monster you hate, I hate Sambulo with everything in me and I don't even think that he could ever say anything or even do something that will change my mind about

him, he took everything away from me started from my family, my self esteem

my virginity, my sanity, my beauty, my innocence and worst of all he took away something that meant a world to me fine he is his father but that didn't mean anything I loved my son from the moon back 😞😞💔 he's no more an my heart is in peaces.....An than there's Melusi the only person who don't care about my feelings but in a way of making me strong, the only person who's allowed to see my craziness an also feel joy in it, the only person who hardly laughs nor smile but still handsome, the only person who actually care for me in a confusing way I feel sad cause he's caught in this I don't hate him actually I love him that's what eating me inside, how can I love the same person who's responsible for my son's death well partly he is 😞 as I was saying he's caught in something that more complicating but that doesn't stop me from wanting him so badly 😞😞 I took my phone an called Zama who answered on the third ring

Zama : Babe

Me : ****sigh**** Hi

Zama : Are you okay? Where are you?

Me : Gcaba's place

Zama : Want me to fetch you?

Me : No I just wanted to tell you that I will be back later

Zama : What about your mom? She's waiting for you

Me : Oh God I completely forgot about that 😞

Zama : You have two hours to be back

Me : Am on my way will talk to Gcaba maybe later or tomorrow

Zama : He's not there?

Me : No

Zama : You alone?

Me : Yes am alone

The word "alone" is too much to make me wanna cry out loud

🤔😞

Zama : Come home I don't want you to be alone there

Me : Am coming

Zama : Am actually coming to fetch you don't move from there okay?

Me : Yeah okay

Zama : I love you

Me : Me more

I dropped the call an compensate whether I should call Gcaba but the pride in me is not allowing me he's the one to beg right? I mean I have to be a hard nut to crack phela Sambulo showed me the hard way that I should not trust any guy fully 😞

Narrated

Gcaba got inside the warehouse he was so angry in a way that his hands craves for blood, he's so angry at Sambulo for damaging Nandile 😞😞 he's angry that he's now being hated by Nandile because of his bloofy fault an stupidity

Ayanda : Boss

Gcaba :....

Ayanda : Gcaba

Gcaba :....

Ayanda : MELUSI GCABA

Gcaba jumped an looked at Ayanda with a frown

Gcaba : What?

Ayanda : Are you okay?

Gcaba : Sure, where is she?

Ayanda : This side I must warn you she's an ass hole

Gcaba : I know I came prepared

They walked to a room where Sane is, she was so happy to see
Gcaba

Sane : Thank God you here to rescue me

Gcaba took a chair that was opposite where Sane is sitting

Gcaba : Rescue you?

Sane : Yes these crazy bitchies kidnapped me

Gcaba : Are you high on something?

Sane : No am not

Gcaba : Wanna be high?

Sane : No I don't smoke

Gcaba : There are so many ways to be high, I can hang you in that rope, it's high isn't? You will float on air how's that

Sane's eyes changed to fear cause Gcaba is not laughing

Sane : I didn't do anything wrong

Gcaba : I didn't even say you did something wrong Sane

Sane : I know that your boys fed you wrong information about me

Gcaba : Didn't you call Sambulo in my house?

Sane : No... Yes I did we were just talking

Gcaba : Sane Sane Sane you know that flat?

Sane : Yes

Gcaba : It have cameras everywhere, you know why?

Sane : No

Gcaba : For people like you who pretend to be something else but behind close doors they change and be the original self...
Your phone had a bug Babe so Ayanda here heard everything you said to your boyfriend

Sane : He... He's not my boyfriend

Gcaba : I don't care Sane 😏 I don't bloody care about that

He stood up and threw the chair against the wall, slapped her with the back of his hand

Gcaba : I hate that busted, I hate him with passion you working for my enemy while Asking me for protection? Do you fuckin respect me? Am I your P***y? 😏

Sane : Gcaba calm down please 😏😏

Gcaba : Believe me am so calm Sane cause I won't kill you today but I want you to first see Nandile and see how broken she is because of your selfishness together with your Sambulo, I want it to be the last face you see when I kill you I want you to think of all the things you said to her that are wrong, I want you to think of how you pretended to be her friend while all along you busy with Sambulo telling him everything about her

Sane : I didn't tell him everything, he didn't know that he had a son

Gcaba : Good Because I want that to haunt him knowing that he killed his son

Sane's eyes popped out 😬🐱 cause when was eavesdropping she didn't hear that part

Sane : Wh... Oh... Oh my God Nan...

Gcaba : Don't 🖐️ don't even say that name with your filthy mouth 😊 AYANDA

He said shouting so Ayanda came rushing to the room

Gcaba : Deal with her but not too much I still wanna have fun with her tomorrow

Sane : No 😬 please Gcaba am sorry don't do this

Gcaba : Make sure that her face is unrecognizable when I get back here

Sane tried to scream but Ayanda wrapped a tape on her mouth

Gcaba : Don't kill her

Gcaba walked out his minding was racing at how he left Nandile in the house, he took his car an drove away cause he wanted to fix things with Nandile

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

After a while he got inside the yard of his flat so he rushed to the house an found Nandile not there his heart was racing fast 😞 he took out his phone an called Skhalo who answered after a while

Skhalo : Boy

Gcaba : Where are you?

Skhalo : Am doing some work

Gcaba : You not at home?

Skhalo : N...

Gcaba dropped the call and searched on his contact he called Zama who answered on the third ring

Zama : G..

Gcaba : Is she with you?

Zama : She accompanied her mother to the airport

Gcaba : Are you with her?

Zama : No I left them at the airport

Gcaba : Y... Sharp

Gcaba took his car and rushed to his car his mind was racing what if the dickhead kidnap her again? Rape her again? Abuse her again? He can't have that he called him and he didn't answer at first, Gcaba kept on calling until he answered

Sambulo : Thembela

Gcaba : Where are you?

Sambulo : My house

Gcaba : Who you with?

Sambulo : Al..... Sorry another call is coming through an it's business so can we talk lat....

Gcaba dropped the call an drove fast to the airport cause what if the business he's talking about is Nandile? He can't have that....that kept on repeating itself in his head 😞

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

After a while he got inside the airport an called Nandile who didn't answer, he tried again but she was not answering that was more to make him crazy "what if they already reached her?" he looked around the airport but nothing so he called again an Nandile decided to answer this time around

Ndile : Mmm

Gcaba : Where are you?

Ndile : Airport

Gcaba : Yeah I know am also here, direct me where you are

Ndile : Will send you an sms

Nandile dropped the call and wrote where she is, Gcaba rushed there like a madman when he got there he just pulled her to him so tight cause he was worried

Gcaba : Thank God!! 😞

Nandile was all confused at what the hell is going on but other than that she wanted this hug so much cause his hugs are the best hugs ever, Gcaba felt his heart sighing he couldn't imagine how he was gonna feel if he came late 😞💔 he didn't care about Nandile's mother all he wanted was a hug from the woman he care about and don't wanna lose

Insert 22 

Nandile

My mother got in the plane an I was left with Gcaba who was busy being so touchy 😏 I wonder what the hell is the problem with him

Me : Gcaba

Gcaba : Mmmm

Me : What's wrong?


Gcaba : With?

Me : We have to go an it's like you don't want us to

Gcaba : No we can go

Me : Are you okay?

Gcaba : Sho

We walked out of the airport to his car, it was a silence long walk to freedom  maybe the problem is that I said I hate

him? I didn't mean that mess 😞....after a while we got inside his car an he didn't start the car he just gave me a stare

Gcaba : Am sorry

Me : For?

Gcaba : For everything, getting your son killed an am sorry that he had to come back because of me

Me : It's okay

Gcaba : It's not okay, cause I have to be crazy an run around looking for you just because am afraid that he will take you away again, rape you or do even worse I can't have that especially if this is about me, he once told me that he loves you an wants to fix things....

Me : I hope you told him to fuck off

Gcaba : I didn't say anything cause as much as this is my fight but it's more yours than mine

Me : What do you mean?

Gcaba : I mean that Sambulo needs to be killed by you not me, as much as he hates me or whatsoever but he killed your soul more an he did a lot of bad things to you, took away everything that meant a lot away from you so I feel like this is your fight

Me : Am scared, am scared of him Melusi

Gcaba : I promised to be there right?

Me : Yes

Gcaba : Am here, am not going anywhere

Me : I know you'll go to New York

Gcaba : He'll be dead by than

Me : Why are you talking about death an killing like it an easy thing to do

Gcaba : If I were to tell you about my childhood you'll understand why am saying this, my childhood was very hard in a way that I should be the same as Sambulo but I don't condone that, if I had a rough time that doesn't mean others have to also face the music

Me : What was wrong?

Gcaba : Everything was wrong Nandile, I will tell you some other times what was wrong, for now let me take you home

Me : Can I be with you?

Gcaba : Why?

Me : I don't want you to be alone after this talk, I can see that you not yourself

Gcaba : If you promise to take that weave off and make up off

Me : No worries I'll do that 😊

Gcaba : Let's go

We drove out of the airport an went to his flat, he was busy singing on the way well I was so laughing cause he's so bad an it's not even funny, I enjoy being with him, he brings out the light that I never thought I had, I mean I lost my son an I should be so sad in a way that I don't even want to go out but if am with him I wish to do everything else 🥰❤

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

After a while we got inside the gate straight to where he's living, we found his flat open we got inside an went to the lounge to find Nka, Sambulo and some other guy I don't know

Gcaba : Do we have a meeting am not aware of?

Nka : I came here to see you regarding the truth behind me seeing Nandile that night and all the lie

Sambulo : Why would you tell him? I mean he don't care about me

Nka : He's my brother so I have to tell him everything

Sambulo : Even if it means betray your blood?

Nka : What do you mean by that?

Sambulo : You know very well what I mean

Gcaba : Mmmh not in my flat Sambulo?

What does Sambulo means by "Betraying your blood" isn't Gcaba their blood?

Sambulo : I told you bafo that I lo....

Guy : Can I talk to you Gcaba if you not busy

Gcaba : Can I call you Scara

Scara : No problem I will come back later cause this is very confidential

Gcaba : Okay will see you later

Scara : Sure boss

He walked out leaving me an these guys, I so hate Sambulo an I just wish he could just drop dead 😞

Nka : Brother

Gcaba : Am waiting for Sambulo to also leave my flat

Sambulo : Am not going anywhere without speaking my mind

Gcaba : Speak your mind

Sambulo : Really?

Gcaba : SPEAK 😞

Sambulo jumped I saw fear in his face 😞 oh my world is he scared of Gcaba? Why would he be afraid of Gcaba? Is Gcaba dangerous? What the hell is going on here?

Sambulo : I will just leave

He rushed out leaving me an Nkanyiso with Gcaba

Gcaba : Nkanyezi

Nka : Can we sit?

Gcaba : Just talk Nkanyezi please

Nka : We had a deal with Sambulo

Gcaba : What deal?

Nka : trafficking

Gcaba : Trafficking what? So I have to ask why? What? How? Question can't you just talk, explain don't make me angry am so pissed off right now so don't add it Nkanyezi I wanna know what your business with Sambulo an if you don't wanna tell futseg don't waste my time

Right now he was no longer the all sweet Melusi

Gcaba : Am listening

Nka : Gcaba wanted to traffic the girl I was with that night

Gcaba : Askies?

Nka : He wa....

Gcaba punched the shit out of Nkanyezi I jumped an screamed cause I was not expecting it

Gcaba : Trafficking!!! 😞

He kicked him on the stomach continuously, Nka was groaning an I stopped Gcaba cause he was killing him

Gcaba : Trafficking in the Thembela Kraal? Are you crazy Nkanyezi Yokukhanya 😞😞 (Bright Star)

Nka : A... Am... S.. So... Sorry Gcaba 😞

Gcaba : You are sorry? You didn't learn neh? You wanna be like your grandfather?

Nka :

Gcaba : EHHH MASIMBAKHO NGIYAKHULUMA (am talking to you, you piece of shit) 😞😞

Me : Melusi can you please calm down

Gcaba : Nx 😞

He walked out so angry an I didn't know if I have to follow him or just stay

Nka : Follow him please 😞😞

I ran after him an he was so walking fast

Me : Melusi please wait for me

He stopped walking an looked at me

Gcaba : I don't wanna hurt you so go back

Me : M...

Gcaba : Go Back MaZikhali just go back

Me : Am not going anywhere I wanna be here

Gcaba : I don't have time for this

Me : Melusi

Gcaba : Yin? Yini Nandile? Hlukana nami please (What Nandile?
Just leave me alone)

Me : I love it when you speak your language

Gcaba : Mxm

I walked closer to him an he was so pissed off you can see it in his face, I pulled him to me an hugged him he was so cold but I didn't care I wanted him to cool down, right this moment I didn't care about anything but him, I wanted him to confide in me cause am here for him just like how he is for me

Me : Hug me

He hugged me back an I was so happy, now I want him to tell me what's wrong cause I can see that something is not right here

Me : Can we go some where so that we talk?

Gcaba : If it about my family I don't wanna talk about it

Me : What you wanna talk about?

Gcaba : I don't know Nandile

Me : You can talk to me

Gcaba : Maybe some other times, right now I just wanna be alone Nandile please can you go back inside I'll be back make sure that when I come back I don't find Nka there

Me : Gca...

Gcaba : Please sweetheart

He kissed my forehead than walked away leaving me wondering what seems to be the problem

Advertisement

I went back inside the house found Nka still on the floor I was so angry at him for trafficking the girl 😞

Nka : Where is he?

Me : Gone

Nka : Am sorry Nandi

Me : Why?

Nka : I don't know I guess I wanted money

Me : ain't you rich?

Nka : Gcaba is rich not me

Me : How could Gcaba be rich an not you?

Nka : Cause Gcaba can work an earn his living, unlike us we not allowed to work

Me : Why?

Nka : Our parents wants us to depend on them for everything so I wanted something I can do for myself

Me : You chose human trafficking? Nkanyezi out of everything you chose that?

Nka : I guess it was the only option for that time

Me : Mmm

Nka : Don't judge me Nandi I needed money that time

Me : Work Nkanyezi work

Nka : Work? Where Nandi? Shoprite or Mr Price?

Me : YES 😊

Nka : A man like me do...

Me : Don't even go there, you have nothing so WORK don't tell me about a man like me cause you need the money so work

Nka : My pride doesn't allow me

Me : Take that stupid pride ke bhuti an shove it where the son doesn't come out cause it won't help you, do you want Gcaba to hate you?

Nka : No

Me : Find a job an stay out of big things that will put you in trouble with your big brother an more the law 🤔

I hate his stupid attitude cause he needs to work his stupid ass 😊

Melusi

I hate what my brother did, I didn't even want to hear what he was doing this trafficking for 😞 the fact that he did it makes me question him as in all of him, I drove until I reached a place that I vowed to never come back to, cause the person who is here really ruined my life in a way that if I think about it I just sob 💔

Me : Sakhisizwe Gcaba

That's what I said to the person I was talking to, so they told me to wait for him and after a while he got inside in chains like a dog that he is, Yes am in jail to see my Father...you heard right my biological father is in jail how I hate this man, I've got so much hate in my heart and my father takes the crown in my hate department

Dad : Qiniso Melusi Gcaba 😊

That's the name he gave me, I don't usually use it cause I don't want anything that have to do with this dude

Me : You know that this is not a social visit

Dad : I know what are you doing here?

Me : Am here to look at the only person I hate and despise in my whole life ,am so angry at this world and you the only thing I thought off cause believe me Sizwe I hate you with passion

Dad : You can look at me scream ,hate, pray or cry it won't change that am your father

Me : FATHER? 😞

Dad : Yes

Me : Where is my mom father?

Dad :....

Me : Father? Where is my brother?

Dad :....

Me : You Father right? Where is my child? 😞 where is my sister? Where is myself? Am I alive or dead like how you killed me back than? Sakhisizwe the murderer who's so driven by the dirty money ,the person who's so heartless in a way that he killed his whole family for MONEY 😞 now Nkanyezi is doing human trafficking for MONEY 😞 the same money that costed me my life, my family....my everything, Sizwe you a dog an I hate you in a way that I wish death upon you

Sizwe : It was never about money they betrayed me

Me : An my sister? Didn't you get the money?

Sizwe : I did but that doesn't mean I killed your mother for the same reason

Me : YEY IT WAS FOR MONEY CAUSE WHEN SHE DIED YOU GOT ALL THE MONEY SHE HAD

Sizwe : Can you give me a break it was my money

Me : Your money? 😞 Your money? Don't make me angry Sizwe

Sizwe : Am your father

Me : Spare me that stupid word please, Mr Dirty Old Man who killed his family for money

Sizwe : SHE CHEATED 😞

Me : I don't care 😞

The cop didn't even say anything cause it the same thing over an over again we shout at each other like this every time when I used to visit him for all the lecture an insults, what makes me more angry is that he's firm an back chatting me just like how I like a person to do a bit of a challenge 😞

Sizwe : Am tired of saying sorry

Me : SORRY WON'T BRING BACK MY MOTHER 😞 IT WON'T BRING BACK EVERYTHING THAT BELONGED TO ME 😞

Sizwe : Your mother asked for it

Me : Asked for it? You know what I don't know why am here

I stood up an walked away but he spoke

Sizwe : Noswazi (my mother) was having an affair with Sambulo's father I had to kill her, she betrayed me and my trust I had to kill her

Me : Kill her? 😞

Sizwe : YES

ME : What about everyone else?

Sizwe : They were her children 😞

Me : My daughter?

Sizwe : Her seed was there too

Me : Me? 😞

Sizwe : You were not there which made you lucky

Me : NJA 😞

Sizwe : Nja Nawe 😞

Me : So much for being a father

Sizwe : Am tired of apologising for your mother, the bitch who slept with my brother because of lust 😞

Me : You were suppose to kill her only

Sizwe : What's done is done Qiniso move on with your life

Me : How? When everything you did haunts me an keeps on coming back 😞

Sizwe : Find a pastor to pray for you

Me : what? 🤔😞

Sizwe : Just that 😊

This man will be the death of me like seriously 😞 I just feel like screaming

Me : Guess what?

Dad : What?

Me : SAMBULO HATE ME 😞 HE HATES ME FOR YOUR SINS

Dad : YOUR MOTHERS SINS NOT MINE 😞

Me : FUTSEG THIS IS THE SAME FUTSEG NJA 😞 HER SINS YOUR SINS 😞 YOL WERE MARRIED RIGHT? SO IT YOUR SIN NOW 😞

Sizwe : UYANYA MFANAM 😞

Me : MXM 😞

I walked away so angry, I know you may be confused Noswazi an Sizwe are my biological parents, we were a family of 5 including my daughter who was 4 years old but my father burned the 3 alive which is my small brother, mother an my daughter I got when I was 16 years old just because of being heartless an broken hearted, all because of my mothers affair with Sambulo's father 💔, instead of me hating this guy he's the one hating me 😞 I guess it because my father killed his father too, well Sizwe is the guy you don't mess with he kills with no mercy but he did worse when he burned my daughter and everyone who was in the house just because the woman he hated was in the house that's my mother 😞...he sold my sister to another gang leader more like trafficking her an after 2 years her body was sent to me from the guy saying that she was a worthless bitch the hate I had for my father escalated more cause he killed everyone I cared about, I also hate my mother cause all of this somehow is her fault 😞😞 I lost my sister, brother an my only daughter.....now every time when bad things happens I just take all my frustration to him an he knows that if I don't come here I call him cause he have a phone he's hiding in the inside, he's just my punching bag 😞.....the parents am with now are Nkanyezi's parents not mine 😞 I guess that's why Sambulo is taking me like a foreigner in his family...💔

Insert 23 ?

Narrated

Gcaba went back to his flat it was already dark outside so he got inside and found the place dark so he thought to himself that maybe Nandile is gone home 😞 he went to his room for a quick shower and found Nandile busy looking at herself in the mirror, he just gave her a stare and Nandile felt his presence

Ndile : Stop staring at me

Gcaba : I can't help it

Nandile took a gown but Gcaba stopped her

Gcaba : Don't do that

Ndile : Please Gcaba I don't feel comfortable

Gcaba : You have a beautiful body stop doing what you doing I hate it

Ndile : Can I have my gown

Gcaba : No an where did you find the gown?

Ndile : I once slept here remember?

Gcaba : What are you doing in my room?

Ndile : I was waiting for you, where are you coming from?

Gcaba : Somewhere

Ndile : Oh

Gcaba : Don't worry yourself about it

Nandile thought to herself that maybe he was with a girl or something

Ndile : Let me go an sleep

Gcaba : Sleep with me

Ndile : Um....

Gcaba : Not sex Nandile just sleep beside me

Ndile : Ohh

Gcaba : I will never take advantage of you I respect you so much to do that ☹ stop worrying yourself

Ndile : Um okay so ain't you hungry? I wanna make you food

Gcaba : No am full I just wanna take a quick shower meet you in bed

Gcaba went to the bathroom an took a shower 🚿 after a while he got out with only a towel wrapped around his waist, Nandile felt like he's tempting her purposely but she's not gonna fall for it so she took her phone out an pretended as if she's chatting to someone

Gcaba : I know you pretending

Ndile : Am not 😊

Gcaba : I can read your body so well Nandile so go on stare it won't bite

Ndile : Mxm

He laughed an wore something in front of Nandile, she felt like screaming but she just kept her cool

Gcaba : Am done so what's on your mind?

Ndile : Where were you?

Gcaba : You really wanna know?

Ndile : Um No I don't

Nandile was scared to hear that he was with another bitch other than her

Gcaba : Well I wanna tell you

Ndile : Am listening

Gcaba : I went to meet this girl I used to fuck

Ndile : mmm

Gcaba : We talked an did things that I won't tell you in details

Ndile : Mmmm

Gcaba : We drank it was good

Ndile : Mmmm

Gcaba : Why is it like you no longer interested in what am saying?

Gcaba can see that Nandile is jealous that's why he's dissing her like this

Ndile : Phhhs 😊

She pretended to laugh but deep she was so angry that he left her and went to talk with another bitch 😞

Ndile : I am hau

Gcaba : So must I go on?

Ndile : Yes 😊

Gcaba : S...

Ndile : Can I ask?

Gcaba : Yeah go on

Ndile : Didn't you say that you wanna be alone?

Gcaba : Yeah I did

Ndile : And then the bitch.... The girl you telling me about?

Gcaba so wanted to burst and laugh cause Ndile is so angry right now

Gcaba : It was until I met this girl

Ndile : To even think that I waited for you here wondering where you are, are you safe an worried about the whole you kant you busy fucking with girls in hotels

Gcaba : N...

Ndile : You don't appreciate nx 😞 can't you see that indeed am not interested in whatever you saying? 😞

Nandile stood up an stormed out of the room, Gcaba laughed but not loud cause he won't stand her craziness, this girl can turn his anger into joy an laughter without even trying 😊😞 he followed behind her an found here wearing her casual clothes with a phone in her ear

Ndile : Skhalo where are you?

Skhalo : My sweety am in the flat

Ndile : I need a favour can you come an fetch me?

Skhalo : Where?

Ndile : Um Gcaba's place

Skhalo : What are you doing there?

Ndile : Him an Nka fought

Skhalo : What? 😬

Ndile : Are you coming?

Skhalo : Will be there just now

Nandile hung up her phone an Gcaba wrote a message to Skhalo saying he shouldn't fetch her, he will take her home

Gcaba : Babe

Ndile : Don't call me that please

Gcaba : I didn't sleep with anyone

Ndile : I don't care

Gcaba : It feels like you care, listen I can tell you the t....

Ndile : I don't wanna hear it

Gcaba : Come on

Ndile : Mxm 😊

Gcaba went close to her an she was sulking he just smiled

Gcaba : You look more beautiful when you sulking

Ndile : Flirting with me won't get you anywhere

Gcaba : I know calm down an let's talk seriously now

Ndile : I don't wanna hear that you fucked that girl

Gcaba : I didn't even if I did why are you angry?

Ndile : Mxm leave me alone please

Gcaba : 😊 Nandile

Ndile : 😞

Gcaba : Skhalo is not coming

Ndile : Liar

Gcaba : I told him not to cause I really need someone to talk to

Ndile : Am not interested

Gcaba : I was in Jail

Nandile's face shoot up with a worried face right that moment
Gcaba saw that indeed Ndile care about him as much as he also
care about her

Ndile : In jail were you arrested?

Gcaba : No I was visiting my father

Ndile : Your father? He's arrested? I though...

Gcaba : No I was visiting my biological father

Nandile thought to herself, that's why Sambulo said what he said earlier on she sat down on the bed while looking sad wanting to know more

Ndile : Than? How did you go? Was it a social visit or?

Gcaba : It was not a social visit I was angry at Nkanyezi what he did is rising the hate that I have in my hate, Nandile I hate everything I just hate hate hate hate hate it all about hate in my life cause everything I loved died

Nandile was so broken inside cause she thought that maybe Gcaba is not broken but it quite clear he is, Gcaba thought to himself how come a girl just makes him laugh one minute an be angry an sad at the same time

Ndile : Talk to me am listening

Gcaba : I hate my father with passion

Ndile : What did he do?

Gcaba : Let's say he took away everything I had in this world and left me just like that alone

Ndile : You not alone, Nkanyezi loves you, your sister loves you and Your parents loves you

Gcaba knew that Nandile is talking about Nkanyezi's parents but it's not enough

Gcaba : Everytime when am angry I just take all my anger and throw it at my father because of the hate for him, cause you know why I don't wanna be that animal that takes all his anger by beating people up

my father is my punching bag 😞 he's the only person who knows my insult he's the only person who faces my wrath and he's the only person who makes me angry and boil in my heart just by looking at him 😞 I hate him

Ndile : Have you tried counselling

Gcaba : I won't lie like most of these abusing asses who lies about wanting to change by going through that process, I tried

that but it didn't work my father is everything I hate and that won't change

Ndile : Ain't you afraid that maybe one day he'll die, you'll have no one to face your wrath, you'll have no one to face your hate, what if you'll be married will you take that wrath out on your wife?

Gcaba : Am not a woman abuser

Ndile : I didn't say you are Melusi am just asking

Gcaba : I won't abuse you if that worries you

Ndile : I was talking about your wife not me

Gcaba : Even if I get married you'll still be in my life 😊

Ndile : No thanks I'll pass, anyways you'll be okay and am here for you whenever you need to talk or cry or scream or be a p***y am here

Gcaba : 😊 mxm come here let me get a hug

Ndile : A hug? 😊

Gcaba : I was sad bra at least you can hug me so that I feel good

Ndile : Perv

Gcaba pulled her up an they hugged 🐱 Nandile was so falling for Gcaba an each day it just becomes more 😞 as for Gcaba he feels like they should remain like this an he's feeling so clingy towards her like something is pulling him to her 😞👤

Gcaba : Will you sleep with me?

Ndile : No

Gcaba : Please

He pulled out of the hug an kept on blinking his eyes like a kid

Ndile : 😊

They looked at each other for a minute an Ndile interrupted the moment cause she didn't want to be hurt by Gcaba or let just say any man

Ndile : Fine but no touching

Gcaba : With all your curves?

Ndile : Curves?

Gcaba : Yes you gaining phela haven't you noticed that?

Ndile : No an let's go an sleep cause am sleepy now

Gcaba : Mmmm

Gcaba picked her up bridal style an Ndile giggled

Gcaba : You not heavy 😊

Ndile : I know 😊

Gcaba : Roll those eyes once more I will drop you down

Ndile : You wouldn't 😊

Gcaba : Dare me 😊

Ndile : I don't dare you please don't 😊

Gcaba : Mmmm

He went to his room with Ndile still in his arms like a small kid he placed her in bed slowly while getting on top of her, He looked at her straight in her eyes an he felt complete like he's the luckiest dude ever but he is not sure of what he's feeling 😊

he kissed her and they kissed passionately but he didn't want sex from her just closure 😊 he's still not okay because of what Nka did so this will keep his mind sane just like how Nandile do without even doing anything

✘

✘

✘

✘

✘

Sambulo was with his friends and he was so angry because he knows that if Ndile is protected by Gcaba it will be hard to find her or get to her because they heard that she's at the airport but when they got there Gcaba was already with her so you can imagine it won't be easy for him to get her if she's with Gcaba that also makes him angry because Gcaba is not supposed to even be with her because that breaks the brotherhood code they have

Sizwe : Sambulo

Sambulo : Sure

Sizwe : We've been calling you for a while now what are you thinking?

Sambulo : Gcaba is really stealing this girl away from me

Boh : I think he's just protecting him

Sambulo : Nandile is in love with her, I know when she's in love believe me she is an I'll be damned if I let them date, fine am scared of Gcaba

Sizwe : Why are you this scared of Gcaba?

Sambulo : Gcaba is dangerous

Boh : What did he do?

Sambulo : He.... He burned his ex girlfriend because she cheated on him

Sizwe : What? How did he find out?

Sambulo : Proof was sent to him

Boh : By who?

Sambulo kept quiet an Sizwe looked at him defeated

Sizwe : You? 😊 you like to provoke him who was she cheating with?

Sambulo looked away cause he was the one cheating with her

Sizwe : Like father Like Son 🤔

Sambulo : Don't judge me Sizwe

Boh : He is like you?

Sambulo : No he's not a woman abuser but he's a hater, he burned her with no remorse you could have seen the hate that was in his eyes, he have a lot of hate inside his heart he may have not loved that girl but what angered him is that the girl didn't want to take care of the child in a good way an after all that she cheats so he burned her, after that he lost his daughter the same way

Boh : Same way?

Sambulo : She was burnt alive

Sizwe : How old was she?

Sambulo : She was just 4 years

Sizwe : Who burned him?

Sambulo : His father

Sizwe : Like Father Like Son 🤔

Boh : True

Sambulo : That's when he got worse, he's the same as his father he have no remorse whatsoever, he became the animal that he is

Sizwe : I don't see him as an animal he's cool

Sambulo : That motherfucker is crazy an by the look of things he's creating his own animal in Ndile not in a bad way though he just wants her to be able to face her fears , I have to get her before he finishes what he's doing cause I can't have that

Sizwe : Why do you wanna abuse her again?

Sambulo : I don't want to abuse her again I've changed my ways

Sizwe : Why do you abuse girls?

Sambulo : I just love to be in control of everything an I had to watch my father being murdered just because of a woman so I do hate them sometimes cause I still needed my father in my life, so there's a time where I would just hate a girl to a point that I would wish to kill her

Sizwe : You need help

Boh : Seems like you know Gcaba so much why do you hate him this much?

Sambulo : I don't hate him

Sizwe : So if it not hate what it is?

Sambulo : I envy him 🤔

Boh : You saying that he's a bad guy

Sambulo : He's a bad guy to those who betrays him or do anything to harm his loved one's which is why am scared that it will be trouble if I take Ndile while she's in his place

Sizwe : He's sounds dangerous but on the outside so cool for my likings an I don't wanna involve myself in this 😬

Boh : If he can burn people with no remorse what makes you think that he won't burn you once he find you with Ndile worse this will be more like kidnapping her

Sambulo : He's a family man he won't do anything to me

Boh : Ihhe lomjita (This guy)

Sizwe : You full of yourself Sambulo by the look of things Gcaba an Ndile will be your downfall🤔 don't say I didn't warn you or maybe you'll be dead to even say it

Sizwe walked out on them, Sambulo was so adamant that even if he's scared of Gcaba but he will take Ndile away from him without killing him.

Insert 24 😞

Narrated

Gcaba : Wakey Wakey

Said Gcaba waking Nandile from her sleep, he had breakfast in his hand, Nandile opened her eyes with annoyance cause she doesn't want to be waken up

Ndile : Perv why are you waking me up?

Gcaba : Girls don't sleep this much

Ndile : You so sound like mum right now 😊

Gcaba : She wakes you up with a song

Ndile : How do you know that?

Gcaba : Breakfast?

Ndile : Don't ignore me Gcaba

Gcaba : Okay go an brush your teeth first

Nandile stood up and went to the bathroom to clean herself up and after that she went back to the room

Gcaba : Come let me feed you

Ndile : Feed me twice

Gcaba : Huh? 🤔

Ndile : Food and News

Gcaba laughed because Nandile was so serious in her face there was no emotion showing

Gcaba : Fine, I visited your home while you were here in Jozi
lord knows doing what 😊

Ndile felt bad after what Gcaba said, Gcaba's anger rose because he was thinking why would Nandile run away with such a perv of a guy and it clicked to him that she was in love that's what was happening

Gcaba : Come on eat, we have to go see someone

Ndile : Who's that?

Gcaba : You'll see where we going

Nandile ate the food that Gcaba prepared for her

✘

✘

✘

After 2 hours Nandile was done doing everything so she was ready to go with Gcaba, she was wearing a tracksuit and found Gcaba so smart like always so she felt bad and also remembered how Sambulo used to control the way she dresses

Ndile : Um let me be right back now

Gcaba : Where are you going?

Ndile : To my so called room

Gcaba : Wanna put more make up? I mean you looking good even though I would have preferred the real you

Ndile : I would go outside with my real face

Gcaba : Why?

Ndile : I have scars on my face, people will laugh at me an even laugh at you

Gcaba : Why laugh at me?

Ndile : I mean if you this good than I have to also look good

Gcaba : You do look good with your natural look an I like you like that more, as for "looking good, looking good" blah blah you saying I don't care about that, they won't laugh at me even if they do I don't care, you are not going upstairs cause I know you want to change what you wearing now c...

Ndile : How did you know that?

Gcaba : I told you Ndile I can ready your body so you won't fool me

Ndile : You looking handsome an am in my tracksuit

Gcaba : So? Look at those curves, this thing do things in your body an any guy would love to be me an walk around with a person who's so perfect like how you are, an you gaining 🤔🤔

Ndile : Am not gaining can we go

Gcaba : You gonna be a cow that's when I won't go with you anywhere 😏

Ndile : Can we go 😏 I hate you right now

Gcaba : I know, no need to say that twice 😏😏

Nandile walked away leaving Gcaba, who was just admiring Nandile, she has gained an it looks good on her ☺ ,Gcaba followed her an they went to the car, they drove away Nandile's phone rang an it was her father she was shocked

Ndile : Papa

Him : How are you?

Ndile : Am good you?

Him : Am also good your mother got home safe

Ndile : That's good Papa send my regards to her

Him : When are you coming home?

Ndile : Um...

Him : I want you home when this month ends, home misses you an I m... I need you here

Nandile's father misses his daughter, he may be angry at her but that doesn't change the love he have for her

Ndile : No problem Papa I will be there

Him : That's good now take care of yourself

Ndile : Thanks I will

Him : Bye

He dropped the call an Nandile was no longer in the mood, she was emotional an wanted to just cry, Gcaba saw that

Gcaba : Don't even think about it

Nandile looked at him an that made her wants to cry for real

Gcaba : Yey Tseg don't cry 😊

Ndile : Leave me alone 😊

Nandile ended up laughing cause Gcaba is life to her, they played music an sang while laughing after a while they got in warehouse

Ndile : Where are we?

Gcaba : Warehouse

Ndile : What are we doing here Gcaba?

Gcaba : We here to see someone

Ndile : In this dodgy place? Is this where you kill people an bury them

Gcaba : Who said anything about killing people?

Ndile : Am not going inside here Gcaba

Gcaba : Nandile

Ndile : No take me away from here, just because we know each other an all of that doesn't mean you should introduce me to this nonsense 😞

Gcaba : Oh

Ndile : Take me home not your house but my place

Gcaba : Not that I was gonna take your crazy ass in my flat

He walked away an went to his car

Gcaba : Am not gonna wait for you

He was so angry but at the same time wanted to laugh cause Nandile is terrified, Nandile rushed to the car an they drove away

Ndile : Who was there for me to see?

Gcaba : Don't make me angry cause you said that you don't wanna be there, why must I tell you now who's there?

Ndile : Well...

Gcaba : Ayy kahle wena 😊

Nandile kept quiet an looked the other way

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

After sometime they were outside Nandile's place an Nandile got down the car an walked away, Gcaba drove away leaving her like that, she got inside the house an found Zama with Lihle

Ndile : Guys

Zama : Jeez girl you scared the shit out of me 😞

Ndile : Sorry Babe

Lihle : Who dropped you?

Zama : Obviously

Lihle : I want it to come out from her mouth

Zama : 😊

Ndile : Am not gonna say anything

Lihle : Why? 😊 it's not a problem to crush on the guy

Zama : An the crush is so serious

Lihle : Just like how you crushing on Skhalo

Zama kept quiet an the girls laughed at her

Ndile : Shame Zama 😊 cat got your tongue?

Zama : Jerks

Lihle : It's not a bad thing 😊 so where are you coming from? An you actually gaining, Gcaba must be hitting it right

Ndile : Jeez can't yol wait for me to sit down

Zama : No we want it all

Lihle : We have to go to school tomorrow

Lihle is furthering her studies so they at the same varsity

Ndile : I know right

Advertisement

am so hungry again

Zama : What do you mean again?

Ndile : Gcaba did a breakfast in bed for me

Lihle : Wuuuuu 😊🤔 I can imagine his muscles showing 🍷 an a tray in his hands saying "Babe wake up I made you breakfast "

Zama : Or "Rise an Shine my sweet thang breakfast in bed"

Lihle : Wuuuu 🤔

Lihle an Zama were screaming as for Nandile she just laughed while shaking his head

Zama : Did you guys **clear throat**

Ndile : No

Lihle : Nooo? An he made you breakfast in bed? Wuuuu that man is for keeps I wonder when will I find a boyfriend who will be such a gentlemen

Ndile : Gcaba is not my boyfriend

Zama : When will you both date?

Lihle : Miss Judge Judy, when will you an Skhalo date

Zama : Mxm that's my brother

Lihle : Brother? The one you always talk about his torso 🤔😁

Ndile : What?

Lihle : Am telling you she's always fantasising him an her doing it

Ndile : Oh my God 😁 enough that's my brother for crying out loud

Lihle : 😁

Zama : I'll get you wena Lihle

The girls laughed cause indeed Zama have it all bad for Skhalo

😞♥

✘

✘

✘

✘

Gcaba went home to see his father (Nka's father) and he found Nka in the living room napping so he just passed him because he was still angry, as for Nka he smelt his cologne so he stood up and followed him to his room

Gcaba : Stop following me Nka please

Nka : Am sorry

Gcaba : Sorry?

Gcaba turned and looked at Nka who had a remorseful face expression but Gcaba didn't care

Gcaba : You traffic a girl and say sorry to me? Are you serious right now?

Nka : I didn't go through with it

Gcaba : Why?

Nka : Because I saw Nandile that day, she was so bruised in a way that even clothes she was wearing and make up she was wearing didn't hide anything she was so badly hurt so I thought about what I was about to do, it was so much to think that this girl was gonna face the same fate Nandi was going through, Gcaba am so sorry I only wanted to do something for me

Gcaba : Why can't you work? Do you think I was born rich? I worked my way up

Nka : Gcaba you have everything

Gcaba : Let me tell you a story when I found out that I was gonna be a father, my own father called me back home cause I was in varsity, he told me that I will have to drop out from school and work for my child you know what I did? I worked and studied at the same time cause I wanted to give my baby everything and also to be successful so that my baby won't struggle when she grows old, Nkanyezi this is life you have to work your way up don't wait for circumstances to make you wake up like me, you have to study and work it doesn't matter where as long as you working, my parents had money right? To take care of my child but they wanted me to be responsible cause if they didn't what would have happened right now for me since my mother is no longer there and father is in jail, Bro I don't want any human trafficking happening

Nka : Am sorry

Gcaba : Sorry won't make me forgive you so easily you will have to earn it by looking for a job an work

Nka : I will

Gcaba : Any job Nkanyezi Gcaba ☹ but not trafficking people

Nka : Not gonna do it again

Gcaba : Fine, what did you say to Sambulo?

Nka : I told him that you had another job for me

Gcaba : Tell me something did you tell him that am the one trafficking people?

Nka : No I didn't

Gcaba : I hope for your sake you telling me the truth cause you know I can do worse than what he did to Nandile an the bruises that were showing all over her

Nka : I know

Gcaba : I can strike you with lightning an don't care in the end about what happens to you ☹

Nka : I know Gcaba

Gcaba : Just wanted you to know, now leave my room

Nka : I tho...

Gcaba : Get out we not friends ☹

Nka got out of the room wondering when will Gcaba forgive him and what job must he find

✘

✘

✘

✘

Nandile wiped off the make up that was in my face while looking at herself in the mirror while thinking about what Gcaba said earlier on

Gcaba : "you do look good with your natural look and I like you like that more, as for "Looking good, looking good" blah blah I don't care about that, they won't laugh at me even if they do I don't care"

Those words made her realise that she's so falling deep in love with Gcaba and it scares her

Gcaba : "wanna put more make up? I mean you looking good even though I would have preferred the real you"

How can a man be good with words and be a jerk at the same time, I mean this man makes her angry, happy, makes her laugh in her sad days this man is everything she needs in her life

Gcaba : " Nandile you not alone that what am sure of"

A man who always makes her feel alive and a man who always reminds her of how beautiful she is with her natural look, a man who always remind her that she has him she's not alone

Gcaba : "The scars makes you the perfect woman that you are, your body is good don't be ashamed of it"

Nandile smiled with tears in her eyes cause damn she's so in love with him and it even scare her cause the last time she fell in love, she got abused so she took her phone and called him he didn't answer at first but ended up answering

Gcaba : Nandile

That voice of command an authority, the voice that life her spirit up, the voice that sends butterflies in her stomach, she breathed out loud with tears streaming down her face

Ndile :....

Gcaba : Nandile are you okay? Your breathing is not normal are you crying?

How can he manage to make Nandile swept off from her feet by just opening his mouth, the care he have for her is amazing, always knows when everything is not okay, he's just perfect

Ndile : He's so perfect 🤔😞🤔

Gcaba : Huh who's perfect

"Snap did I say that loud" Nandile thought to herself

Ndile : I need you

Gcaba : Where are you?

Ndile : Home

Gcaba : Am coming stop crying I don't wanna see that okay?

Ndile : **sniff** 😞 okay

He dropped the call an rushed to her, he didn't want anything to happen to Nandile, he'll rather die first than to let anything happen to her 😞....Nandile was smitten by his action towards her needs she's so sure that this is Love an it strong an so pure.

Insert 25...♥

Narrated

There is a knock on the door, Nandile went to check on the door with her heart beating fast from her chest cause she don't know what to say to Gcaba, when she opened the door she found Sambulo standing there with a big smirk, Nandile became so scared in a way that she wished Gcaba could just shoot this as of a guy 😞

Ndile : What the hell are you doing here? 😞

Sambulo : Can I come in?

Ndile : No leave at once an how did you get inside?

Sambulo : I have my plans, now move

He said that pushing Nandile inside, Ndile was scared an that what Sambulo wanted for her to be weak an vulnerable 😞 that made him happy he just laughed while closing the door more like locking it cause Nandile was alone, Zama went out with Lihle

Ndile : Sa... **clears throat** Mkhuseleli please don't do this

Sambulo : Am not doing anything

He said that walking close to Nandile who was shaking 😞 and she was so sad that Gcaba is late, what if this guy kills her, at least she must first tell Gcaba that she loves him 😞

Sambulo : Let it be that you thinking about that Dickheado 🤔

Ndile : Sambulo what do you want from me? You abused me enough why can't you just leave me alone 😞

Sambulo : N...

A knock came through so Sambulo took out his gun and shook his head cause Nandile was about to scream, Ndile was already crying 😞

Sambulo : Open up and say you busy, if he persists let him in I'll deal with him

Sambulo was not sure about what he is saying cause he is afraid of Gcaba, he knew that he's the one knocking they always together that's why he knew

Sambulo : Move

Nandile was so scared so she went to the door an pretended to smile, Gcaba pretended as if he's not aware that she's pretending an he already knew that Sambulo was inside the house so he came unarmed cause he wanted Nandile to be the one to fix this if she can't than he'll intervene

Ndile : Um Hey 😊

Gcaba : Hi

Ndile : Am sorry I called you

Gcaba : Oh what's wrong?

Ndile : Um **clears throat**

Gcaba : Don't even think of lying 🤔

Ndile : I wanted to just see you 😊 an now that I have seen you I can sleep

Gcaba : Want me to tuck you in?

Ndile : No I'll be okay

Gcaba : You know that am not going anywhere right? So you might as well let me in

Nandile thanked the Lord cause she didn't want to be alone with the animal

Ndile : Jeez come in 😊

Gcaba stepped inside but he didn't finish his walk cause Sambulo gave him a hard smack with a gun in his head and Gcaba fell down while laughing it may be painful but he will not show this ass that it's painful, as for Nandile she screamed while running to him but was stopped by Sambulo

Sam : If you go anywhere close to him I will blow his brain out 😞

Gcaba : Let me see you try nja (Dog)

Sambulo : I have a gun so don't talk too much bitch

Gcaba : 😊 There's always a first time for everything

Sambulo : Shut up! 😞

Gcaba : You need your head tested cause you crazy, kidnapping a girl who don't love you anymore 🤔

Sambulo : I said shut up Qiniso

Gcaba : How n...

Sambulo shot the sealing an Nandile screamed

Ndile : Please Gcaba stop provoking him he's gonna kill you

Gcaba : He won't, this one is a coward

Ndile : Gcaba please I can't lose you too

Sambulo got angry an wondered who else did she lose

Gcaba : Am not going anywhere

Sambulo : Okay this party is over, Nandile take this bag an take out the rope inside

Sambulo threw a bag at Nandile, Gcaba was just on the floor not that he can't do anything but today is the day that he's teaching Nandile to be strong and be fire

Sambulo : Tie him in that chair now

He said that pointing a gun at them so Nandile begged the ever stubborn Gcaba to sit in the chair so that he can tie him

Sambulo : Make it fast Nandile 😞

Gcaba wanted to eat him alive for shouting at Nandile but he kept his composure, Nandile was shaking while doing what she was sent to do, all along Gcaba was looking at her straight in her eyes, assuring her that she will be okay

Gcaba : Breathe and relax don't be weak

He whispered that to her ears as for Nandile she was so angry, sad, frustrated by everything cause it seems like Sambulo will forever be part of his life like always

Sambulo : Now we need to talk, I need to make some rules here

Ndile : Sa...

Sambulo : Stop calling me

Gcaba : Don't talk to her like that

Sambulo : You too s.h.u.t up 😡 you two are making me a fool, now listen to me I want all of this to end here right now

Ndile : Please... 😞

Gcaba : Nothing will end

Sambulo : Oh really? This will end today

Gcaba : How? HOW? 😡

Sambulo : Says the person who killed my father so easy 😡 now what makes you think I would never kill you so easy

Gcaba : Because you have no balls to do that

Sambulo paced up and down, Nandile was looking at Gcaba and wondering why did he kill Sambulo's father, Sambulo punched Gcaba in the stomach he groaned, Nandile knelt down while crying

Ndile : Please Sambulo don't kill him 🙏 take me instead

Sambulo : Don't make me angry Nandile I will kill this dog, give me one reason why I should kill him?

Ndile : Because I....I care about him 🙏 please Sambulo I will do whatever you want me to do

Sambulo : Really?

Ndile : Yes, Yes Sambulo don't kill him 🙏

Sambulo : Qiniso you heard that? The bitch will do whatever I tell her to do

Advertisement

you lost another person you love just like how you lost that bastard of a daughter 😊

Gcaba felt his heart closing in cause he was not expecting that at all ,Sambulo can play with a lot of things but not that that's what he thought 😞

Gcaba : Am warning you

Sambulo : My father did good by sleeping with your mother cause it costed you a daughter, you heartless bastard I so hate you for killing my father

Nandile started looking at Sambulo in another way, she asked herself how can one be heartless

Gcaba : Stop

Sambulo : Stop? 😏 I will break you into pieces Gcaba I will do something that will haunt you forever now

Gcaba : Don't hurt her Sambulo

Sambulo : I will rape her in front of you, I will torture her in front of you, you know why? I want her to be pregnant with my baby so that if you kill me you will know that I took away your happiness forever 😞 I want you to think of my father who said stop when you slaughtered him like a dog

Gcaba : HE WAS A DOG 😞 BECAUSE OF HIM I LOST A DAUGHTER, I LOST MY SISTER I LOST MY FUCKIN DAUGHTER, I LOST MY FATHER I HATE HIM BECAUSE OF YOUR FATHER 😞😞

sambulo : Now am taking him away too

All along Nandile is thinking about what to do next cause Sambulo has crossed the line how can he talk about making her pregnant whereas he killed her son 😞😞

Gcaba : Sambulo I will kill you

Sambulo : You'll kill me in hell cause I will break yoy Gcaba, I want you to not be able to fix yourself 😞

Gcaba : We'll see about that

Nandile threw a vase in his head, he fell down an fainted, Nandile rushed to Gcaba who was nearly breaking an he can't keep his strong front, Sambulo touched a sensitive subject which is his child 💔 people can play with a lot of things but not his child, Nandile untied him fast an hugged him tight while crying

Ndile : Am sorry I didn't know that you this broken

Gcaba just shed a tear cause right now he didn't know what to do or what to even say cause Sambulo has just broke him again, they were so lost in their thoughts like they were in their own world

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

After a while Sambulo was tied in a chair upstairs one mistake he will fall an roll down the stairs, Nandile took the jug an poured some cold water he woke up while jumping nearly fell but Nandile pulled the chair to her

Ndile : No, not yet

Sambulo's eyes turned red with anger an he thought that Nandile will be scared or something but she was far from being scared, she was angry that Sambulo abused her, killed her son,

raped her, broke Gcaba in that kind of way, she was just angry
an wanted to take all the anger at him an not in a nice way,
Gcaba was just standing there looking at everything

Ndile : I wanna do what you did to me

Sambulo : Try me

Ndile : Try you? TRY YOU? 😞😞

nandile pushed him he fell while rolling down the stairs she
followed right behind him walking downstairs as for
Sambulo he was screaming an he fainted again so Nandile
took another water an poured at him

Ndile : YOU KILLED ME IN SO MANY WAYS WAKE UP! 😞😞 NO
TIME FOR SLEEPING HERE DOG

Sambulo : Nan... Na... Ndile please 😞😞

Ndile : SHUT UP 😞

Gcaba : Yes

He was saying that whispering cause he loved the fire that was in Nandile 🤔👤 Nandile was like a possessive animal

Ndile : You kicked me like this

Nandile said that kicking him like how he used to kick him

Ndile : You kicked me like a dog 😞😞 now pay bitch!

Nandile was kicking him non stop Sambulo was screaming an Nandile remembered how she begged him for her life but he was not having it 😞

Ndile : "I will kill you today" remember those words? You didn't care about how I felt you just wanted to end my life
Sambulo😞😞 you wanted me DEAD JUST LIKE HOW YOU
KILLED YOUR SON 😞😞

Sambulo's red eyes that are full of blood popped out because of shock

Ndile : YOUR HATRED FOR GCABA COSTED ME A SON, YOU
KILLED MY CHILD 😞 TALKING ABOUT BREAKING SOMEONE'S
LIFE HOW ABOUT WHAT AM TELLING YOU NOW YOU KILLED
YOUR OWN CHILD 😞

Sambulo felt his heart beating loud, he felt numb, he felt like an
ass

Sambulo : My son? 😞

Ndile : You have no son cause you killed him Sambulo an now
you want to kill the only thing that I love an want to spend my
life with

Nandile didn't care cause she loves Gcaba an don't wanna lose
him, Gcaba heard that an he looked at Nandile an swallowed
hard 😞 cause he didn't see that

Ndile : you want to break the only person I love an never wanna
lose ,you wanna kill the person who was there when you killed
my son, you killed me in so many way Sambulo, you made me

forget about home and come with your lying ass, you made my father hate me and for that I hate you 😞

Nandile kicked him and took the sjambok that is in the house well they have a sjambok for protection together with Zama so she took it and beaten the shit out of Sambulo

Ndile : This is for my son 😞😞

Nandile was beating him so hard that Sambulo was starting to lose his mind from all the screaming and the pain

Ndile : This is for me 😞

Sambulo was crying like a dying dog as for Gcaba he wanted to dance cause this is it! Cause the new Nandile is here and here to stay

Ndile : This is for Gcaba! 😞😞

Gcaba : Yes babe give it to him 🧑🏾👉🏾👎🏾😞

Gcaba shouted that cause he can see that he created his own animal and no one can change that 😊 Nandile was so angry and wanted to teach Sambulo a lesson he will never forget 😞 as for Sambulo he was so sad and wanted death to find him cause of the pain he was feeling of hearing that he killed his son and the beating that he's getting..

Insert 26 🏰

Nandile

2 Months Later

It has been two months after what happened with Sambulo, we left him outside the hospital with Gcaba he was unconscious but I didn't care an for once I was in control of everything 😊....Gcaba an I didn't speak about my confession of loving him an all of that an I made it seem like I was just protecting him from being killed I know that he didn't believe cause apparently he can read me like a book 😬 well we still contact each other cause after the thing with Sambulo I went home even today am home, I wanted to spend some time with my parents, I won't complain it was hard at first cause my father was still not good but eventually everything fell into place, he's good an we a happy family... Lately I have been feeling uneasy I don't know why well today we are going to the mall with my mother, I so miss Gcaba cause it been two full months without seeing Gcaba 😞💔 but hopefully by Friday I will go back to Jozi cause I may have came here but Jozi is still the place I wanna live in an spend most of my life there...I woke up did my morning hygiene after a while I was done with everything so I wore my clothes

while looking at myself in the mirror, I know Gcaba would have complimented me cause he's such a sweetheart

Mom : Baby come on we need to go

Me : Am coming

That was my mother shouting from outside my room, I rushed to her and greeted my father after that we went our way with mom

Mom : Are you good?

Me : Yes, you know while walking like this I remember when Sonke said that when he grows up he will buy me a car so that I won't be burnt by the sun

I said that looking down cause I can feel my tears wanting to come out

Mom : I would have been so happy to meet him

Me : I know he was a good boy who loved his mamma

Mom : Do you know who killed him?

Me : Um No I don't

Mom : Am sorry but surely they will find the person in the end,
Baby the reason why I wanted us to be alone, I wanted us to
talk

We were still walking to the rank cause we can only get the taxi
there

Me : What did you wanna talk about?

Mom : You

Me : What about me?

Mom : I know that losing a child can stress you an maybe you
end up wanting to kill yourself

Me : Mom I won't kill myself

Mom : You not eating Nandile an you can't do that with your
condition

Me : Am not stressed Ma if you talking about that condition

Mom : Am not talking about that Nandile an you know it

Now am confused what is my mother talking about?

Me : I don't know what you talking about Mama

Mom : You don't know? Like really?

Me : Yes I don't

Mom : You'll be having another mini Sonke soon

Me : What?

Mom : You pregnant Nandile Zikhali again

It clicked oh God it clicked, all the constant crying, all the morning sickness I've been having all the crazy craving I've been having, am pregnant again 😞 oh my God my mood is so ruined
💔 I didn't know that something like this would happen to me
😞 how can Gcaba be this careless

Mom : Your father told me

Me : My fath... Father?

Mom : Yes he told me last Month but I thought that maybe you'll be the one to tell us but still nothing so I had to speak to you Nandile, we may be dissapointed but we feel like God has

blessed us with another grandchild, he have blessed you with another child cause he can see that you so sad in your heart, Nandile you are old now an I don't think you can hide things like this to us, we your parents so I want you to make us your friends people who you can trust, we can never betray you or even hurt you like how people in this world hurt us 😞

Me : Thanks Mom I didn't know at all 😞

Mom : Stop crying you want me to be arrested for making a pregnant woman cry 😞

Me : Am so sad am not suppose to be pregnant Mom 😞 I don't wanna be pregnant again, what if I lose this child like how I lost Sonke

I was now standing there an my mom hugged me, I mean how can be pregnant again 😞 this is not something I planned, I just don't want cause what of Gcaba also don't want this child, what if he hates it because of how her daughter died not that I know the whole story behind the whole thing 😞

Mom : am here an will help you through this pregnancy, nothing will happen to this child sthandwa sam we in this together, I know that I should be angry at you for this but I

want to be here for you, I lost you once so I can't lose you again so come wipe those tears an let's go have some fun we will talk about everything some other time

Me : I will have to go back to Jozi

Mom : I know because you have to speak to the father of the child

Me : Yes **sniff** maybe he's n...

Mom : We are ready that what matters babey, if he's not than that is his bad

Me : Thank you

We hugged once more an carried on going to the rank

✕

✕

✕

✕

After a while we were back from town an I was in my room napping cause am so tired I think right now since I know that am pregnant my body betrays me 😞 my phone rang an it is

Gcaba, I don't know if I should answer or just ignore him because he made me pregnant so I answered after a while

Me : Hey

Gcaba : You thought by not answering you'll be more beautiful?

Me : I wish I could laugh at the joke you making

Gcaba : 😊 am gonna laugh at you ke mna

Me : Gcaba can you be serious?

Gcaba : No maan I miss you an guess what?

Me : What?

Gcaba : Guess

Me : Guess? I don't know hau

Gcaba : Just guess you perv

Me : Perv is your ass

Gcaba : The ass that you love right? I know you always checking it out 😊 if you were a guy I would say you gay

Me : 😊 mxm I don't know anything so am not gonna guess anything

Gcaba : I booked you a ticket, I have a surprise for you

Me : Surprise?

Gcaba : Yes

Me : I do...

Gcaba : I know what you want to say but still I'll surprise you

Me : Whatever

Advertisement

I have to sleep am so tired

Gcaba : You tired from what?

Me : I was in town with my mother, I also have something to tell you

Gcaba : We will talk about everything tomorrow an we also gonna talk about what you said to Sambulo

Me : About?

Gcaba : You lov....

Me : **clear throat** I need to go

I hung up the phone I know the idiot is laughing wherever he is
I went to my parents after the call just to let them know that

am going back to Jozi tomorrow because Mr Gcaba have a surprise me 😊 I wonder what it is with that one anything is possible 😁

Mom : Why are you smiling alone?

Oh God am I that in love with Melusi Gcaba 🤔♀️🙄

Dad : There must be a guy making you smile like this

Me : Ahh Papa there's no guy

Mom : Really? Phela there's a guy who called your father like 30 minutes ago

Me : A guy?

Dad : Yes apparently you'll be going back to Jozi tomorrow

Me : Did this guy tell you why?

Dad : Well am not gonna tell cause the guy said that everything is a surprise

Me : A guy 😞

How can my father be this cool with a guy calling him to say that I must come back to Jozi

Mom : Come an eat baby

Me : Umm am not hungry

Mom : When will you eat ke?

Me : I don't know but I'll see maybe later

Dad : Which later cause right now it's late, so the guy makes you full 😊

Me : Aibo 🙄

Mom : Ayy you old now 😊 so don't even pretend as if you don't know what we talking about

Me : Wuu let me go an sleep 😊

I ran to my room an they we laughing I mean am surprised why would my father be all cool with what Gcaba said? Did he tell him what's the surprise is? Is that why he have no problem with everything? 🤔 an sometimes I even think that there's something about my father coming back from the army those years ago they not telling me an I really wanna know, I know that I turn

my back from home but he's still my father so I deserve to know like everything about him 😞

✕

✕

✕

✕

Next Day

I woke up did my morning hygiene cause my plane will be leaving in the next hour or so, after a while I was done and all my bags are packed, I suddenly don't wanna leave home cause it's like now am never coming back just like how it happened long time ago 😞 I just feel sad all of the sudden I think the baby have a hand in this, well it my baby however it would have been great if Gcaba would love this child, I mean Sonke didn't have a father figure in his life so I don't want this to happen to my next child, I just hope everything will be good

Mom : Knock Knock

That's my queen 😊 how am gonna miss her voice when she sings in the morning yey I missed home so now Gcaba is taking me away from home why does it have to be a guy taking me away from my home 😞

Mom : You look sad

Me : Because I am sad mama, once again am leaving home because of another man's voice it feels deja vu

Mom : Listen that time you ran away from home now it different you not running away from home, but your father gave a go ahead

Me : Why would he?

Mom : Because I've seen Melusi, he's a good young boy an by the look of things that guy loves you

Me : Melusi? Love? That is more like mixing water an oil cause it doesn't mix at all mom

Mom : Baby am old enough to see when there's love

Me : If you were young I was gonna say whatever

Mom : I'll slap you if ever you say that again 😏 cause you've just said whatever to me

Me : Mooom I said if you were young 😊

Mom : Whatever 😊😊

Am gonna miss my mother so much together with my father

Me : I have to go am gonna miss you

Mom : We gonna miss you too, unfortunately your father is going with you as for me am not going

Me : It okay I love you okay?

Mom : I love you too come to mama 😊

We hugged after that I went to the car mt father helped me with the bags, which reminds me my father has been avoiding picking up big things am so worried about him like seriously worried about him 💔

Dad : We have to go

Me : Yeah

He drove away with my mom waving at us like in the movies,
what different is that I don't even know when I'll be back

Dad : Don't cry

Me : Am not crying 😊

Dad : I can see that you want to, so don't forget to come back
phela you have that habit 😊

Me : Am not gonna forget hau 😊 am gonna miss you papa

Dad : I'll miss you too my angel

We drove to the airport while joking around together with my
father

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Later The Day

I was waiting at the airport for someone to come an pick me up
an than I smelt it, the smell that drives me crazy an makes me

want to love love love an love again 😊 he's here I turned an he was standing so handsome I don't if my hormones are playing tricks with or what but damn this guy is delicious just by looking at him

Gcaba : Are you gonna stare at me, rape me with your eyes or you gonna hug me

I screamed an hugged him it was a tight one 😊 I even cried I don't but the love I have for this is escalating an I don't know what to do to show him an make him love me too, after a while we pulled apart he looked at me more like reading me, his eyes didn't leave my tummy but he had a smile though I wonder will he still be like this when I tell him about my pregnancy

Gcaba : Can we go? Babe 😊

Me : Yes we can go 😊

We walked to the car he was all smiley I wonder what's this about

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

After a while we went into some big house I don't even know so I just looked at him

Gcaba : Welcome home

Me : Home? 😊

Gcaba : This right here is our house I mean like you always in my house so it our house 😊

Me : Oh my God 😊 you so crazy so you bought us a house

Gcaba : Obviously 😊😊

Me : Don't roll your eyes at me 😊 is this the surprise?

Gcaba : No uyaphapha 😊 (You forward)

Me : 😊

Narrated

Gcaba was so happy to see Nandile, Gcaba is also in love with Nandile but he's just afraid and don't trust himself enough to be

in a relationship, cause with Nandile he can see a long term thing so which is the reason why he's not believing in himself with long terms things, they got out of the car with Nandile screaming for the house an that made Gcaba so happy

Gcaba : Is it good?

Ndile : Yes it is 😊

Gcaba : Come here

They were in the lounge so Nandile went to Gcaba

Gcaba : Tell me what's eating you?

Ndile : Eating me?

Gcaba : I can read you remember?

Gcaba pulled Nandile to him an Ndile was so scared

Ndile : I know

Gcaba : You can tell me

Ndile : Well when I was home I discovered something

Gcaba : What's that?

Ndile : Um I discovered that I am... Am...

Gcaba : You?

Ndile : Am p....

Gcaba's phone rang so he answered it cause it was his mother

Gcaba : Mama

Mama : We at the airport

Gcaba : Oh am coming give me 15 minutes I'll be there, you with Dad?

Mama : Yes an with him obviously, Can't wait to see her 😊

Gcaba : She's good an I also can't wait for you guys to be here ,you guys wait there am coming

He dropped the call an looked at Nandile who was dissapointed cause she was so close to telling him the truth

Gcaba : Listen I have a surprise for you so let me go an get it for you, I know what you wanted to say an I've been waiting for you to tell me this likw forever I know you pregnant an daaaaaamnnn giiiiirl am crazy 😁😁

Gcaba looked at Nandile so passionately cause he thought that maybe she will abort the child because of Sambulo, Gcaba knew a long time about the pregnancy but kept quiet an right now he's so teary because of all this so he kept his composure

Gcaba : You missy wait here, this all you don't disappoint do whatever you want... Am coming back okay?

Ndile : How d....

Gcaba kissed both cheeks an Nandile giggled an Gcaba ran away before she could talk, Nandile giggled more while thinking what could be the surprise 🤔 like what more will he do than what he already done?

Crop Top Bonus Nyana ♥👩🏻♀

Gcaba

I am Melusi but my father usually called me Qiniso cause he said that I stand the truth an I speak no Lie, you can call me a perv or whatever but I know what am doing, finding Nandile broken like that made me want her so badly cause she remind me of myself when I lost everything in a blink of an eye, I promised myself that I will never be hurt again nor watch the one I love hurt, For 3 Months I have been hiding the truth from the one woman I want in my life, cause believe me you I love Nandile an the fear of losing her gets the better of me, I realised all of this when Sambulo was so convinced that he will rape her again I felt my knees getting weak cause I don't want anything to happen to her 😞...For the past three months she has been saddened by the death of his son, I watched the woman I love cry almost every night cause most of the time she spend time with me 💔 I couldn't tell her the truth cause I knew that it will only cause complications, I saved her son cause I couldn't bear hearing her like for the rest of our lives crying because of Sonke, this is the surprise I have for her I know that she will be angry but she will have to understand when I explain

everything to her 😞, Sonke has not fully recovered but he woke up and asked for his mother well I will go in full when I explain everything to Nandile who will surely snap

Now I was in the airport when I saw this little man, who also gave me a stare and after like two minutes he cried I just held him into my arms I don't know but the bond I have with this child is so out of this world, he held me tightly while crying I knew that the pain he's feeling was of emptiness, the feeling of missing that one or two people you know but can't reach out to them, the feeling of wanting to be to do everything but because of the condition you in, you can't that how he felt and I know it he's mine now and I will love him till eternity ♥

Me : Am here now

He hugged me and I picked him up we walked to my car with my parents and Msizi following me, we got inside the car and Msizi drove us away no one was talking in the car but his heart was beating fast that scared me and I felt a tear falling from my face, what is this kid doing to me 😞 I felt his tiny hands wiping away my tears and he looked at me and smiled while snuggling himself on me I just looked at my mother and she was also crying but

silently, only emotions were all over the place in the car, after a while we got inside my yard

Mom : Is this you?

Me : Yes this is me

Mom : Nice 😊

Me : Can he talk?

Mom : Yes he can talk, just struggling to walk because of the operation

Me : Will he be okay?

Mom : Yes he will be fine my baby, how are you feeling after you know?

Me : Am good ,boy boy let's go in

Mom : Don't you think that you should talk to Nandile first

Well my parents are the one's who kept this young man safe an alive, they did all they could to protect him an make sure that he recovers from all the critical condition he was facing, well my mother is a Doctor so it is her thing to make sure that we are okay an alive 😊

Me : You think so?

Mom : Yes I will take Sonke than you will give us a go ahead

Me : Okay Mom thanks

I walked out an went straight to the house an was met by a nice aroma, well she cooked oh the woman who's out for my heart



Me : Honey am home

Ndile : You home? Where's my surprise?

Me : Chill 🖐️ all in dur times

Ndile : Really? Let's see what you will eat Mr all in due times 😊

Me : You so heartless 😏 anyways I have someone who have been longing to see you, I want you to keep an open mind an make sure that if you wanna shout or scream just not in front of the person, after that you can kill me or dig a grave for me an bury me 🤔

Ndile : What's wrong?

Me : I will now bring someone

Ndile : No problem

I went outside and signalled my parents to come

Advertisement

they walked to the house with Sonke in my father's arms, they came inside the house all along I was looking at Nandile who was so blank like she can't see that this is her son or maybe it because he's facing the other way, but if you a parent you can see your child even if he or she is facing the other way

Me : Nandile

I saw Sonke's eyes shoot up and he looked at her mother and I knew that this will be hard than I thought 😞💔

Narrated

Nandile felt strange emotions is this her Sonke, is this a dream? Is this real? Is Sonke really alive? That's all in her mind she finds it hard to register, Sonke saw pain in his mother's face and he just

cried cause Nandile to scream which is what scares Gcaba he doesn't want to see Nandile breaking down 💔

Ndile : Is he alive Gcaba? 😭 is my son alive?

Sonke : M..Ma..... Mama 😭

Nandile jumped while praising the lord she was like a crazy woman, she ran towards her son and took him after that they went upstairs after a while they all heard Nandile screaming more like cursing 😭💔 that broke Gcaba he wanted to go up and be with Nandile but his mother stopped him

Gcaba : She's pregnant with my child, maybe something is wrong with her

Mom : I assure you this is her way of dealing with this, you will go when she's cooled down

Nandile was so crying hysterically and Gcaba felt his heart closing in, Nandile was so sad and happy at the same time but also hated Gcaba for all of this, he hated him for lying he just hated the full him, after a while Sonke was fast asleep and Gcaba's

parents were also in the spare room resting as for Msizi he was also gone to his house, Gcaba was so worried about Nandile so he went upstairs to his room when he gets there, he found Nandile looking into space, he got inside the room and closed the door more like locking it

Ndile : Open that door

Gcaba : The room is sound proofed so even if you kill me no one will hear the sound of the gun shot

Ndile : I hate you Gcaba I even hate this th....

Gcaba : Don't say something you will regret, our child got nothing to do with this

Ndile : It got everything to do with this Melusi Gcaba, how can you lie to me? You said my son is dead whereas he's alive

Gcaba : I was trying to protect him

Ndile : I DIDN'T ASK YOU TO DO THAT 😞

Gcaba : You didn't have to Nandile I wanted to

Ndile : You selfish

Gcaba : Selfish? You don't know what I did for my s.... For Sonke you don't know

Ndile : I DON'T CARE GCABA 😡 THIS IS ALL YOUR FAULT NOW YOU MADE ME PREGNANT SO THAT YOU COULD TRAP ME? I WILL ABORT THIS CHILD AN LEAVE YOUR SORRY ASS

Gcaba : Leave my sorry ass? Am not gonna say anything bad to you cause am sure you'll cry, fine abort that child, ABORT IT FOR CRYING OUT LOUD 😡 have I given you any reason to doubt me? I have been loyal to you like am your boyfriend or something you know why? Because I care about you, your son was dying an I couldn't have that cause I care about you Nandile, your son needed a kidney an guess what? I WAS THERE 😡 I GAVE HIM ONE CAUSE I CARE ABOUT YOU, Nandile you've been through a lot an I couldn't bear seeing you hurt again so I saved him for you, I saved him for us cause I l... I care about you so if you wanna abort my own child it okay

Ndile : Gc...

Gcaba : You know when I lost my daughter in that fire I lost everything I had in my life, I tokd myself that never again will I be hurt like this, but that day when Sonke was shot took me back to when I lost one thing that mattered I couldn't lose another one again because of my family, I love your son Nandile an I fuckin Love You, am literally going crazy I don't know what you want me to do now you wanna kill my own child? Just because of protecting your heart from always breaking if you talk about Sonke? Nandile I don't care what you

do but know that I love Sonke so much an I will protect her over
an over again if I have to, I will move mountains for him cause
he's mine as for you am so dissapointed in you an right now I
hate myself for loving you 😞😞

Gcaba walked away with tears falling from his eyes, he went to
Sonke's room an looked at him with so much love an hurt

Gcaba : I will protect you always s... Son 😞💔

His heart was breaking he just broke down because of all the
past coming back to haunt him once more but this time it's all
in the hand of the woman he loves

Insert 27

Narrated

Nandile went to check on Gcaba after like an hour she found him sleeping on the floor in Sonke's room that saddened her but she was still stressed an amazed by what is happening in her life like everything is presenting itself all in the same time 😞😞💔 if loving a true man comes with so many baggage an so much sacrifices cause she is so amazed by what Gcaba did for her, she is lost of words cause she didn't know that Gcaba loves her so much, however she feels like Gcaba is being unfair she have every right to scream an be angry, even though she said something that she wishes she never did 😞

Ndile : Gc.. Gcaba

Nandile went down on her knees an shook Gcaba who opened his eyes an they were bloodshot 😞

Ndile : Let's go to your room before we wake him up

Nandile stood up and pulled him to her, then they walked to the room, she pushed him on top of the bed and lay beside him because she was worried about him

Gcaba : Am sorry, am sorry about everything I said 😞

Ndile : It okay Melusi

Gcaba : No it's not, I was selfish Nandile fine I should have told you about Sonke but he was in ICU so I had to protect him and take him away from all the pressure that was in this place, Babe I wanted your son to recover in a good manner, he woke up last week and asked for you that's why he's here, am sorry if we came across wrong I wanted to make you happy

Ndile : I am happy Gcaba, just that I didn't expect this I thought that my child died I mean I even buried him only to find that he's not dead, he's alive and thanks to the man who cares about as much as I care about you Melusi thank you so much for loving my son the way you do, thank you so much for doing everything you can to make sure that am happy like always

Gcaba : You everything in my life Nandile so I will protect you always

They kept quiet with Nandile's head napping in Gcaba's chest his heart was beating slowly

Ndile : Why did he kill her?

Gcaba : Who?

Ndile : Your father... Why did he kill your daughter?

His heart started beating fast an Nandile got worried

Gcaba : My mother cheated on him with Sambulo's father

Ndile : Oh my world so your father killed your mom an your daughter?

Gcaba : Yes he burnt them inside the house an sold my sister to a kingpin of Trafficking humans she also died in the hand of that evil man

Ndile : Oh God 🖤😞

Gcaba : I cried Nandile because I loved ny daughter apart from what my mother did I also loved her 😞....I feel like am not worth it

Ndile : Am here Gcaba am not going anywhere this is a promise an I will keep it just like how you kept yours an protected me from all the bad things 😊

Gcaba : I didn't think I will ever love a child like how I do now, I didn't even want to have a child cause I was afraid that I will lose him or her like how I lost my daughter, Nandile when your son was shot I cried an my heart was broken cause I love him like how I loved my daughter, I don't want anything to happen to him.... The fact that he came in the wrong way made my heart bleed because he was gonna die in the hands of his father I just couldn't lose him I wanted to make you happy, you went through a lot so I didn't want anything else to happen to you Babe

Ndile : Thank you so much Gcaba

Gcaba : It a pleasure now sleep please my child also needs to rest 😊

Nandile smiled cause she was complete as for the whole I love you story that Gcaba said she's gonna ask him tomorrow, as for Gcaba he didn't want to talk about that

✘

✘

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Next morning Sonke shouted and Gcaba woke up quickly but didn't want to wake Nandile up, he went to Sonke's room and found him looking around like he's lost when he saw Gcaba he smiled but tears were falling from his eyes, he may be old but deep down he wants all the love he can get, his mind is blurry at the moment but he can remember his mother and Gcaba

Gcaba : Little man

Sonke : Hey

Gcaba : How did you sleep?

Sonke : I slept good

Gcaba : Want me to do something for you to eat?

Sonke : Am not hungry, I want my mother

Gcaba : She's resting, once she wakes up you'll be together and surely spend time the whole of today

Sonke : I was scared when you found me

Gcaba : I can see that's why you crying?

Sonke : Yes

Gcaba : How about I give you a bath?

Sonke : Yes

Gcaba : I thought you were gonna say No you gonna do it for yourself

Sonke : I can't bend 😞

Gcaba : I understand 😊 am here for you an your mother is also here for you, no one will hurt you again I will make sure of it

Sonke : Gcaba are you gonna be my dad?

Gcaba looked at Sonke an wanted to talk but he was tongue tied cause the question was hard to answer

Sonke : You saved my life

Gcaba : Okay big man time to bath, can't wait for you to be better so that you can bath yourself I can't be nursing a 9 year old

Sonke wanted to laugh but his body was so sore 😞😞 Gcaba did all the bathing after a while they were done with everything, Nandile woke up an went to check in Sonke's room first but

didn't find anyone so she thought to herself was she dreaming yesterday? Where is he? Is her son alive?

Ndile : Gcaaabaa

Nandile shouted his name an Gcaba heard that

Gcaba : Kitchen

Nandile rushed to the kitchen an there he was

Advertisement

more handsome than ever but he looked so pale an you can see that he even lost weight 😞💔 that broke her heart

Ndile : Hey baby

Nandile hugged her son, Gcaba felt emotional but he didn't show that cause he's a man with pride

Sonke : I missed you mummy

Ndile : I missed you too, what are you eating?

Sonke : Soft porridge

Ndile : Who made it for you?

Sonke : Gcaba

Ndile : Thank you

Gcaba : It a pleasure, don't mean to be forward but he have to take his pills

Ndile : You not forward hau 😊 I'll take them for him

Sonke : No I will go an take them

Ndile : Can you cl...

Sonke : I wanna get used to walking, am training myself 😞

Ndile : Okay come back with those pills please

Sonke : Okay Mom

Sonke stood up an walked slowly upstairs an Nandile was just looking at him

Gcaba : Not hungry?

Ndile : I am hungry

Gcaba : What you wanna eat?

Ndile : I don't know maybe you...

Gcaba just chuckled cause he was not expecting that, he went close to her and cupped her face Nandile felt her cheeks heating

Gcaba : So much effect

Ndile : I think your child have a hand in it

Gcaba : Which one?

Ndile : How many do you have?

Gcaba : Apart from the daughter that I lost a long time ago, I have a son and also expecting

Nandile gave Gcaba a stare cause she was amazed by what Gcaba is saying, did he just say he have a son? Does he mean Sonke is his son?

Gcaba : Are you okay? I hope you don't have a problem with what I said

Ndile : No I don't actually that...tha...

Gcaba : Just shut up 😏

Ndile : Mxm so how did you manage to take him away?

Gcaba : Who?

Ndile : Sisonke?

Gcaba : That's the part you won't like

Ndile : I want to know

Gcaba : Sambulo helped me

Ndile : What? Did he know that he wa...

Gcaba : No I just wanted him to return the favour I did for him

Ndile : At least he can do one good thing perfectly

Gcaba : He wouldn't have messed with it cause he knew what was at stake

Ndile : Thank you Qiniso, thank you so much

Gcaba : Whoa when did we get there? The Qiniso part? 🤔

Ndile : Why don't you love that name?

Gcaba : Please don't call me that, Melusi is good!

Ndile : Why?

Gcaba : I don't have to explain myself to you, call me Melusi or just forget calling me

Ndile : I wan...

Gcaba : I won't repeat myself Nandile

Gcaba walked away from Nandile an she wanted to know what really went wrong between Gcaba an his father cause it seems like, something more happened

✘

✘

✘

✘

Nandile found Gcaba in his office cause Sonke was sleeping, Gcaba was watching into space like he have a lot of things going on in his mind

Ndile : Am sorry about earlier

Gcaba :....

Ndile : You know I love the name

Gcaba : Please Nandile

Ndile : Can you please listen to me than you can talk

Gcaba :

Ndile : Ever since I knew you, you always stand for the truth, you always heal me with the truth even if it hurts but you don't care as long as am healed that's what matters to you, I think the person who named that knew that you will be the most honest person people have ever met

Gcaba : You know what Nandile? I don't care even if my name means I can conquer the world I don't care I don't want that name, please don't ever call me that again

Ndile : why?

Gcaba : My father named me that name

Ndile : So?

Gcaba : So? Are you gonna ask so? Nandile if I named you Nobuhle cause you beautiful right? After that I take away all that Beauty by beating you up or kill your son would that Beauty be still there?

Ndile : No

Gcaba : Would you feel worth of being called Nobuhle?

Ndile : N...no

Gcaba : So why must I love being called Qiniso? Just because am all honest with you what about being honest with myself, Nandile am lying to myself and the hate I have blinds me to the finish, my father took all the honesty, the belief I have with myself away from me, he killed my daughter, he took away everything I believed in I don't feel worth of being called Qiniso cause am not honest with myself I don't even know how to be, I don't even know how to feel Nandile I don't even know myself... I can make you strong but I don't have anyone to make me strong!

Ndile : Come here

Gcaba : No

Ndile : just come our baby wants to hug you

Gcaba : You using our child wena 😊

Ndile : Aibo am not come let me hug you

Gcaba stood up and went to hug Nandile who was so worried about him

Ndile : Am here actually we are here

Gcaba : Thank you 😊

Nandile pulled out from the hug and looked at Gcaba straight in his eyes

Ndile : Can I ask you something?

Gcaba : Sure...

Ndile : Where did you find the donor?

Gcaba : Donor?

Ndile : Are you the one who donated the kidney for my son?

Gcaba : Ye... No

Ndile : Which is which? Yes or No

Gcaba : No

Ndile : Who?

Gcaba : It's not important

Ndile : I want to know Gcaba

Gcaba : Why?

Ndile : Because I wanna thank that person

Gcaba : Thank me

Ndile : No don't make this hard Gcaba just tell me the name

Gcaba : Am not gonna say anything Nandile so stop asking me stupid questions

Ndile : I DESERVE TO KNOW GCABA

Gcaba : You don't deserve to know nothing, our son is safe that what matters

Ndile : FOLLOW YOUR NAME AN TELL ME THE TRUTH

Gcaba : LET ME NOT TELL YOU **he calmed himself down** let me not tell you one thing over an over again Nandile stop calling me that, I saved your son what do you want from me?

🙄?

Ndile : The truth 🙄 who is the bloody donor!

Gcaba : You an ungrateful person, you should be grateful that I didn't leave your son to die in the hands of his father

Ndile : Wow Qiniso wow

Gcaba : You sure wanna see me angry? Provocation is what you doing right? Nandile am warning you stop calling me that name if you want us to carry on with whatever we doing?

Ndile : You told me you love me an now you lying to me

Gcaba : Love you? Was I drunk? 🙄

Ndile : Qinis....

Gcaba : Damn you woman STOP CALLING ME THAT! 😡

He was so angry causw Nandile is provoking him, he didn't want to tell her who is the donor cause he knew that they will fight but now Nandile is being an ass an he can't stand for this he just stormed out, Nandile was also angry she wanted to know who is the donor is that too much to ask for... 😡

Insert 28

Gcaba

I just don't know if I'll be able to keep up with a relationship I mean the nagging an forever wanting to be the last one to say something, I mean I helped that girl's child an this is the thank I get, I was driving an I don't know where cause am so fed up with this girl I need air, if it means her being pregnant with my child makes her this crazy than it would have been better if she didn't fall pregnant 😞 my phone rang an it was Skhalo calling so I answered the call

Me : Sure Skhalo

Skhalo : We at the ba...

Me : Am coming

Skhalo : Seems like someone is stressed

Me : You don't wanna know 😞

I hung up my phone an switched it off cause I don't want to be disturbed, Nandile is the last thing in my mind now 😊.

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

After a while I was outside the bar they were in cause they sent me the location, I got inside an saw them so I went to them

Nka : Bro

Me : Sharp, can I have a strong drink Nka

Nka : Am not a barman

Me : am sending you to get me a strong drink

Nka : Won't argue with you 😊

Nka stood up an went to get me something to drink

Msizi : You good?

Me : If it not for Skhalo's sister I would be good

Skhalo : What did she do?

Me : She wants to know who's the donor

Skhalo : Tell her that it's Msizi or Nka

Me : No why must she know everything I mean I saved her child isn't that enough already? Why does she want to complicate things

Skhalo : I'll talk to her

Me : don't bother

I took the drink that was in Nka's hand and poured it down my throat 😞

Me : another one?

Nka : Jeez..

Me : Now Nka please

Skhalo : You need to calm down, why don't you just tell her the truth? At least you didn't kill Sambulo so maybe she will be happy that the donor is not him

Me : Nka ?

He left us and came back with a whole bottle and I wanted to drink my sorrows away cause this makes me frustrated 😊😞

Nandile

Gcaba was not suppose to be that angry cause I only wanted to know who's the donor not that I will kill him after hearing who's the donor? I know that maybe am ungrateful for just thanking the man for saving my son but still I wanna know who saved him, fine Gcaba is the one who made all the effort but still I wanna know is that too much to ask for? I mean I have every right to know cause am that boy's mother 😞 I tried calling him with no success I think maybe he's angry and ignoring me but I wanna talk to him and fix this but I wanna know who he killed for the kidney cause I know that might be the issue, I know that Gcaba is a gangster although I have not seen him in action but all the not clear information makes everything suspicious.... I took my phone and called Zama who answered almost immediately

Zama : Hey Baby

Me : Hey Zama are you good?

Zama : Yes I wanted to come an see you but Gcaba told me that you not good

Me : Am still not good Zama, I mean am pregnant aga...

Zama : What? Who's child? Jesus Nandile 🙄

Me : I will come an see you tomorrow

Zama : No talk to me what's wrong? I know that Sonke is back an I thought that you'll be happy but now you saying that you not good

Me : You knew about Sonke?

Zama : I recently heard the news Skhalo told me

Me : Am so happy Zama an no one has ever made me happy like how Gcaba is doing but I just feel like we are driftibg apart an am the cause of all that 😞

Zama : What's wrong?

Me : I keep on pushing things Zama, I want him to always tell me everything, I want him to be honest with me

Zama : You know guys like to keep other things a secret cause they are protecting us an I think that is what Gcaba doing

Me : Zama I was in a relationship with Sambulo an he broke me in a way that I don't think I'll trust a guy who's not honest with me at all like how Gcaba is

Zama : What did he hide? I mean this guy has been nothing but a good man to you

Me : He's not opening up to me Zama

Zama : Choomie don't push this man away just because you afraid that he will turn an be like Sambulo 🤔

Me : I have to go an check on Sonke

Zama : I know that you are afraid of being in a relationship but boys are not the same an Gcaba has showed you nothing but care an love, I mean he saved your son if it was another person he would have left him to die without caring about anything, Babe I know that you love Gcaba an all but make sure that you don't enter that relationship while holding on the bad things that happened to your last relationship, give Gcaba a chance

Me : He don't love me Zama 😞

Zama : Did he say that?

Me : No bu...

Zama : I don't want to hear that "but" you coming with 😊

Me : I have to go I will come back home tomorrow

Zama : I'll be waiting for you

Me : Thanks for the word of advise I love you so much

Zama : Okay mama 😊

I hung up the phone an thought about everything Zama said to me, I mean I do love Gcaba but am just scared that he might turn an be like Sambulo cause they are relative, an they have been hurt in a horrible way so maybe he might turn an be like him 😞 an I can't have that especially now that am bringing a small life in our lives, let me go upstairs an check on my joy I found him busy reading a book he's all grown I missed him so much

Me : Hey baby

Sonke : You know am old right?

Me : To me you'll always be my baby

Sonke : Are you okay mom?

Me : Yes

Sonke : I know when you not okay

Me : aww baby am okay

Sonke : Okay come an join me

Me : In bed?

Sonke : Yes if you don't find it awkward to sleep with a boy

Me : Aibo 😊 you my son so why would I find it awkward?

Sonke : I don't know, granny sa...

He kept quiet and looked at me like he said something wrong

Me : What wrong?

Sonke : Can I ask you a question?

Me : Yes baby you can

Sonke : Can I call Gcaba Dad?

I was so shocked to a point that I didn't know what to say, why would this child put me in this awkward situation

....: Yes you can call me Dad

We turned and there he was, I can see that he's drunk but he is keeping his composure 😞

Sonke : Really? 😊

Gcaba : Yes really 😁

Sonke : Now can you bath me Dad?

Gcaba : How old are you?

Sonke : 3

Gcaba : 3 😊😁 in your dreams

Advertisement

go an bath I will come back with your pills an food for now I would like to talk to your mother.

Sonke : Fine I want my food here when I get out

Gcaba : Sure chap you will find it ready 😊

Sonke went to the bathroom to bath, my son is walking funny I wonder will he be able to bath himself, I went downstairs an got him something to eat after that I took it to his room, Gcaba was in his room so I went there he was sitting on the floor I felt bad cause am the one who made him feel like this

Me : Gc....

Gcaba : Ask me anything I will answer

Me : Hu...

Gcaba : Your time starts now, you wanna know everything about me right? Ask

I didn't expect that at all 😞 so I sat on the couch that is in the corner

Me : Who is the donor

Gcaba : Sane is the donor

What!? 😬

Me : Sane?

Gcaba : Yes I killed her because she was working for Sambulo, we did some test an she was the right person who was able to help Sonke so why not

Me : You killed her?

Gcaba : Yes

Me : How many people have you killed?

Gcaba : 3

Me : Who are they?

Gcaba : Sambulo's Father, My baby momma an Sane

Me : Why did you kill your baby momma?

Gcaba : He was in a relationship with Sambulo, even though Sambulo thinks that I don't know that he made it look like Nqaba is the one betraying me whereas he is the one planning my downfall I wanted him to know that if he betrays me again I will burn him alive just like how my father burned my child alive

Me : Gcaba

Gcaba : mmmm

Me : Will you ever be like Sambulo?

Gcaba : If I say No you won't believe so I will leave that to you to find out, what you must know about me Nandile I don't kill I don't just mistreat you without a reason, I don't abuse a woman I was not raised to that, that bitch told me that I need to always treat a girl like royalty

Me : Don't call her like that

Gcaba : She costed me a lot

Me : You need to heal Gcaba. Gcaba : I will

Me : One last question

Gcaba : Yes

Me : Did you mean it when you said you love me?

Gcaba : What do you think? Not that am saying this in a rude way but I just wanna know what do you honestly think?

Me : I think that you don't love me but you pity me

Gcaba : That's where your problem is Nandile am not Sambulo I will never be Sambulo ☹️ I will never abuse you, girl I love everything about you, I even don't care even if you go all ape on me I get angry but ends up coming back to you cause I feel like you are everything I need, I know that it might be hard for you to open up your heart just because I will take you for granted, don't let Sambulo control your life like this, Live your life, love an be happy... I don't want you to feel insecure or for you to feel like I have hidden agendas under the mat or something I need you, I need the whole you not just your body Nandile but the whole you... You are a true woman an that what I seriously need in my life

Me : Does that me that Gcaba loves me

Gcaba : I ask you again what do you think?

Me : I think he does

Gcaba : Do you believe it? Do you wanna believe it? Do you want Gcaba to love you like crazy? 🤔 are you ready?

Me : You'll have to understand me Gcaba, understand that am still not good at trusting people

Gcaba : Come here

I went to him on the floor he made me sit next to him while holding me tight like I said I will run away this guy always makes me feel comfortable whenever am with him 😊

Gcaba : I know 😊

Me : How did you know?

Gcaba : I can read my woman so well

He kissed my cheek while winking at me, he's drunk but I don't care I just hope he will remember all this talk

Me : Your woman huh?

Gcaba : Yes my territory 😊

Me : 😊 to even imagine that you will go all ape on me 😊

Gcaba : Can I kodwa? You always make me laugh even when I try to be serious

Me : It a good thing nje

Gcaba : Obviously 😊

Me : Thank you for everything

Gcaba : For you I'll move Mountains an I'll never stop until you say you need to rest now my love

Me : I'll never want you to rest 😊

Gcaba : I know you so heartless Nandile that's in not up for discussion 😊

Me : Says someone who'll move mountains for me, ain't you the one heartless?

Gcaba : Well I c....

We heard a bell ringing an I looked at this drunk man who stood up an went downstairs leaving me thinking about how lucky I am to have this wonderful, handsome an loving man in my life

Bang Bang!!

That's what I heard a gunshot coming from downstairs oh my God Gcaba 💔💔

Insert 29

Narrated

Nandile rushed downstairs but her heart was beating out of her chest 😞 when she got there she found the shock of her life

Ndile : What's going on here?

Skhalo : Ndile go upstairs

Ndile : Skhalo what is this all about?

Skhalo : I SAID GO U...

Gcaba : You not gonna talk to her like that 😞

Skhalo : I will blow your brains out Gcaba an am lucky cause you are the one who taught me to be this good 😞

No one was shot but Skhalo was just testing Gcaba with the bullet, as for Gcaba he's so angry right now an he wishes to overtake Skhalo an blow his brain out, Skhalo was so angry that Gcaba made his sister pregnant after everything his cousin did

to her, Nandile was so dead scared she don't want to lose both of these people

Ndile : Please guys calm down

Skhalo : Don't tell me to calm down Nandile, you let him take you for granted

Ndile : What?

Skhalo : Once again you pregnant for him 😞 for the same family

Gcaba : am not like Sambulo don't compare us

Skhalo : Oh you speaking the truth vele Gcaba you not like him entlek you worse than him 😞 did you tell Nandile how you killes Sane?

Gcaba : Skhalo 🤔

Skhalo : No I want her to see the animal she's getting herself into 😞 did you tell her that you actually boiled Sane to death? Did you tell her how you made her eat her flesh after boiling her? Did y....

Gcaba : Skhalo come on

Nandile was so terrified now cause she knew that Gcaba is a gangster but this is extreme

Skhalo : Did you tell her how you killed your baby mama?

Gcaba : Skhalo

Skhalo : NANDILE THIS IS A MONSTER ARE YOU PREPARED TO LOSE ME AGAIN BECAUSE OF HIM 😞

Ndile : Skhalo 😞

Skhalo : I won't let you date this animal, he's my friend my best friend even though best friends don't do this shit 😞 I know every shit he does so I'll be damned if I let you date him

Ndile : Skhalo I love him

Skhalo : You said the same thing with Sambulo an look at what he did to you, don't you learn Nandile it always the same shit with you 😞 if you know what's good for you, you'll go upstairs take Sonke an all your shit we leaving?

Ndile : Skhalo please 😞

Gcaba : Nandile just listen to him

Ndile : Don't you love me Gcaba?

Gcaba : Let's not complicate things Nandile just take your things and leave with him

Ndile : Am not going anywhere Qiniso 😞 I wanna be with you

Gcaba : Listen to me Nandile, remember those years ago when you left home to be with Sambulo? You did the same thing you doing now and you lost your family don't you think that this time around you might lose them forever 🤔

Ndile : What about you Gcaba? Do you think I want to lose you? I don't want to 😞

Gcaba : Ba... Nandile come on don't cry you gonna stress the baby, you not losing me you just letting me go, I mean we just started our thing so I don't think it will be hard for you to forget

Ndile : It will be hard 💔 I love him Skhalo don't make me lose him 😞

Skhalo : Am giving you 15 minutes if you don't come I'll know that you choosing him over me 🤔

Skhalo left them standing there, Gcaba was defeated but he's not about to show that to Nandile, Nandile didn't want to go away 😞 her heart is breaking into pieces with what Skhalo is doing

Gcaba : Come here

Nandile ran into his strong arms an they hugged so tightly

Ndile : Please tell him to don't do this 🙄

Gcaba felt his heart closing in cause Nandile was sobbing loudly he pulled out of the hug an looked at her

Gcaba : Look at me Babe

Ndile : No

Gcaba : Please 😞

Ndile : I don't wanna go Gcaba 🙄

Gcaba : Hey Hey Hey Listen please 😞 I know an I understand you love me an I also love you 🙄 please go with him, he knows what good for you

Ndile : You are good for me Gcaba you taught me everything, like how to be strong please don't do this to me 🙄

Gcaba : I want you as much as you want me but you have to listen to your brother an let this be, he only wants what best for you an that is not me, am a murder, am a lot of things that can make you run an never come back

Ndile : I know that you killed your baby momma I don't care ,you killed Sane an made her do a lot of things I don't care cause I want you, you did your things an got passed it so why must I always remind you of that, please give us a chance let Skhalo go alone

Gcaba : No as much as this is not what I want but No I don't want you to do that, go with Skhalo I don't want you to fight with your family because of me I love you so much to do that to you 😞

Ndile : Gcaba

Gcaba : You need to go I will call you just to make sure if you doing good

Gcaba kissed her forehead an than took his car keys an left Nandile crying inside the house, Gcaba drove off leaving the angry Skhalo waiting for Nandile, Nandile went upstairs an took her staff after that he went to Sonke's room, he was fast asleep so she gently woke him up, he was so annoyed when he opened his eyes

Sonke : mmm

Ndile : Come let me carry you, we going to your uncle's place

Sonke : What about dad?

Nandile felt her heart tightening inside her chest cause she don't know what to say to her son 😞

Ndile : Um we will see him tomorrow

Sonke : I wanna leave tomorrow not today

Ndile : No we are going right now, so wake up let's go Sonke 🤔

Sonke : Mooom 🤔♀

Sonke woke up an wore his clothes after a while they were inside Skhalo's car an no one was talking in the car, Sonke was angry

Sonke : When are we going back home?

Skhalo : we are going home

Sonke : Is dad there?

Skhalo : Dad

He said that looking at Nandile who looked down

Skhalo : He will come later

Sonke : If he will come than why didn't you just leave us there
cause vele my father will be coming to us later

Skhalo : Nandile

Ndile :.....

Sonke : Mom

Ndile : Yes baby

Sonke : Are you okay?.

Ndile : Yes baby don't worry

Sonke : Than why did we leave dad?

Ndile : Because we have to live with your uncle

Sonke : You know am not a child right? I can see that something
is not right

Ndile : I know that Sonke but now can you shut up an let me be

Sonke : Mxm 😞

Skhalo : Ye...

Ndile : Skhalo please not now 🤔

Skhalo kept quiet an they drove away quietly, after a while they got inside the house cause Skhalo also brought an house this side, they got inside the house an Sonke gave his mother a stare

Ndile : What?

Sonke : Am I gonna sleep on the floor?

Ndile : No

Sonke : Where's my room ke?

Ndile : Skhalo?

Skhalo : Go upstairs second door on your left

Sonke went upstairs he was so angry cause he can see that things are not good between his mother an his dad

Skhalo : Am dis...

Ndile : Not now Skhalo it been a long day I need to sleep where is my room?

Skhalo : No you gonna sit an talk to me am tired of you Nandile, I lost you for 8 years now you want to do the same

Ndile : Am old Skhalo I can do whatever I want to do

Skhalo : You my sister

Ndile : I know that am your sister but now am old I can see what is right, am no longer that naive girl

Skhalo : To me you'll always be my little sister

Ndile : That doesn't mean that you will have to keep me away from being in love Skhalo it's unfair I love Gcaba

Skhalo : Let us not go there

Ndile : Why? Tell me why?

Skhalo : Because he's not good for you

Ndile : Will someone ever be?

Skhalo : No

Ndile : That why I told you that I don't wanna talk about this

Skhalo : Fine am scared Nandile

Ndile : Scared of what?

Skhalo : What if you make a mistake Nandile

Advertisement

what if by any chance you cheat on this guy he will kill you

Ndile : I will neeve cheat

Skhalo : Nandile, Sambulo can drug you maybe if he comes back an maybe sleep with you an than send pictures to Gcaba he will kill you I don't wanna lose you Nandile

Ndile : Gcaba loves me Skhalo

Skhalo : That what makes me more scared the fact that I can see that he loves you Nandile an it's so scary in a way that he will not hesitate to kill you if something wrong happens 😞 I don't wanna lose you

Ndile : I can take care of myself Skhalo, I can control Gcaba don't worry yourself I love him Skhalo an I want to be with him at least now am not running away from you but am here with you an also loving a guy who is your friend, I know he broke the guy's code but he loves me that why 😞 I don't wanna cry anymore Skhalo cause my baby can feel that am stressed out I don't need all of this from you at least ke think of my baby don't be selfish 😞 I'll figure out which is my room

Nandile walked upstairs and when he was about to pass Sonke's room he heard him talking and she was about to get in

Sonke : Dad I miss you come back to me

Gcaba : where are you?

Sonke : Dad are you crying?

Luckily the phone was on loudspeaker so Nandile heard everything

Sonke : No am not

Gcaba : Why do you and mom treat me like am a child, am 9 years old not 4

Gcaba : To me you'll be 4 all your life

Sonke : I need you here now Gcaba I don't care how you do it

Gcaba : Sonke?

Sonke : No Dad my mother is not okay and it all because of you, am not okay and it all because of you, you not okay and it all because of you

Gcaba : What did I do?

Sonke : You not fighting for us like a man would

Gcaba : A man would? How do you know about man fighting?

Sonke : If you stop treating me like a child you would know that am old now

Gcaba : Sonke I love you okay? But now I don't think me fighting will do any good am sure your mother hates me or even feel like am not good enough for her

Nandile felt her heart breaking into pieces cause she loves him despite what she heard about him she still loves him

Sonke : Dad I will fight for you don't worry I love you bye

Gcaba : So...

Sonke hung up his phone an cried cause he don't want to lose Gcaba, he don't know the love of a father an now that he finally feels it someone takes it away from him, Nandile didn't wanna make him more angry so she went to sleep with a broken heart

Gcaba was in his room at home, he was tearing so badly cause he's into this so badly that being away from Nandile breaks his

heart into pieces, his mother knocked and came inside the room when he found him like that her heart broke cause she have never seen Gcaba crying cause even when his daughter died he didn't cry but he was like a mad person with his action

His Mom : Gcaba

Gcaba : Not now Mama

Mama : Am not going anywhere I want to know what's wrong, you worrying me

Gcaba : Mom am I that bad? Don't I deserve to be happy maybe?

Mama : What? You deserve everything in this world Babey, you deserve to be happy

Gcaba : Everyone takes my happiness away

Mama : We are your happiness

Gcaba : No mama you don't understand Nandile is my happiness, I love that girl like am crazy, my life is more alive because of her, she's the pillar of my strength the reason why right now I need to go on, she's everything I need in a woman, right now I feel like I should mourn cause I love her and she's gone

Mama : Gone where?

Gcaba : Skhalo took her away from me Mama people hates me so much that me being happy doesn't make them happy for me

Mama : Gcaba,Nandile loves you am sure she won't leave you for any of the things she heard, The most important thing in life is to learn how to give out love, and to let it come in...Nandile loves you don't doubt that

Gcaba : I am so totally, completely, overwhelmingly, eye-poppingly, life-changingly, spectacularly, passionately, deliciously in love with her.....The best and most beautiful things in this world cannot be seen or even heard, but must be felt with the heart that how I feel about her Mama, The only thing we never get enough of is love; and the only thing we never give enough of is love I want to give her all the love in this world but why Skhalo won't let me? When I wake up in the morning, I am thinking of her. When I go to sleep at night, I am thinking of her,And all those hours in between, I think of us I don't think I'll survive without her 🥺 I can't Mama I really can't 🥺💔

His mother's heart broke into pieces an she's conviced that she will fight for her son's happiness

Insert 30

Nandile

My heart is broken I don't know if it because Skhalo did this to me or it because Gcaba is not talking to me at all or it because my son is also broken by this... I love Gcaba an I never thought it will be this deep 💔 I didn't sleep at night my mind is racing am worried about a lot of things 😞 I miss Gcaba so much that I feel like I will be crazy 😞 am in my bed when the phone rang so I just answered without even checking who's calling

Me : Hello

Gcaba :

Me : Hello

Gcaba : Nandile **sigh**

Me : Oh my God Gcaba

I felt a tear falling in my cheek, my Gcaba is calling me 😞

Gcaba : You didn't sleep at night

Me : I did

Gcaba : Nandile don't lie please

His voice is hoarse it's like he have flue or something

Me : Are you good?

Gcaba : Yeah u?

Me : No am not

Gcaba : I can hear in your voice that you not okay

Me : I need you Gcaba 🥺

Gcaba : Babe don't cry please I didn't mean to hurt you

Me : No no no you not hurting me infact you are making things better by calling me 🥺🥺

Gcaba : I wilk try to come an see Sonke, he called me yesterday an it seems like my son is not okay with all of this 🥺

Me : I know my love but he will be okay

Gcaba : 🥺

Me : Are you still there?

Gcaba : Sure

Me: what's wrong?

Gcaba : Nothing I have to go we will talk later

Me : You will call me again?

Gcaba : Yes I will call you again, another thing I want to be there on your next appointment with the doctor

Me : You mean to tell me that you will see me on that day?

Gcaba you can't be serious

Gcaba : Do you think it's easy on me what's happening? It's not Nandile but your brother wants it like this so we have to do that

Me : So you not gonna fight for us? Is our love worth fighting for or not?

Gcaba : I don't have energy to fight Nandile am sorry I have been fighting all my life so another fight will kill me straight

Me : Wow just wow Gcaba you know what let's leave this it's over

Gcaba : What?

Me : Yeah

I dropped the call I mean why does he have to be an ass, he won't fight for me just because he have been fighting all his life, I was not there when he was fighting so I must not carry the burden that is not mine 😊 I woke up an did my morning hygiene he's not calling back so I guess he don't love me the way I thought he did....after a while I went downstairs to be met by Skhalo I didn't have mood for him cause am so angry at him so much that I feel like I hate him but I don't he's my brother after all so I passed him an went to the kitchen an got something to eat after that I went to the lounge where he was sitting I didn't greet cause I don't have time for him

Skhalo : So you don't greet anymore?

Me :

Skhalo : Our parents are coming this side tomorrow

Me :

Skhalo : Am sure they will speak some sense into that big head of yours

Me :

I don't wanna waste my energy by replying to his comments an stupid argument he's starting 😊

Skhalo : Nandile please talk to me

Oh his stupid ass is down now he wanna talk to me nicely 😞

Skhalo : I know that you may think that I don't care about your heart an all that but am doing this for you

Me : I didn't ask you to do anything for me Skhalo what I wanted from you was to be my brother that's all

Skhalo : An am doing what a brother should do Nandile which is to protect you

Me : Protect me? You don't care about breaking my heart but what you care about is to protect someone who's not in danger 😞 I needed your protection back than an you couldn't do it now you busy protect me from nothing leave me alone Skhalo, leave me the hell alone I don't wanna talk to you

I stood up an I saw defeat in his eyes, I didn't want to say what I said but he makes me angry

Narrated

Skhalo's heart broke when Nandile said what she said, he thought that he's doing what is good for Nandile but clearly he's failing cause he's ending up hurting her in the process his phone rang an it was a number he didn't know so he answered

Skhalo : Sure

Person :

Someone was breathing so hard on the other side

Skhalo : Who's this?

Person : We need to talk meet me in my house in 15 minute don't be late

He dropped the call an Skhalo took his car keys an shouted

Skhalo : Will be back Nandile am going out 😞

Nandile didn't reply cause she didn't care about that so Skhalo walked out to his car

✘

✘

✘

✘

After a while Skhalo was outside Gcaba's house so he took his gun an went inside to find Gcaba on the floor with two empty bottles an holding one on the other hand, Skhalo didn't imagine Gcaba to be so weak just because of a girl let alone his sister not just any girl

Gcaba : Oh you came

Skhalo : Sure

Gcaba : You happy now? We broke up in the morning just because of you

Skhalo : You broke up? 😬

Skhalo didn't expect that which makes it clear to him to why Nandile is so moody today 😞

Gcaba : That's what you wanted nje don't act surprise

Skhalo : Why did you call me here?

Gcaba : To tell you that am going back to New York, I want you to take care of the business this side, I will keep this house for Nandile an Sonke, also for the unborn baby, I will always come back to check on my child if I can't have your sister Skhalo then I won't stay here an watch her moving on with her life with someone else cause it will come to that

Skhalo : Whoa Whoa what do you mean leaving?

Gcaba : Just that...

Skhalo : Are you crazy Gcaba?

Gcaba : Maybe but maybe I'll be good if you tell me what do you want from me

Skhalo : You can't leave

Gcaba : Why?

Skhalo : What about Nandile?

Gcaba : What about her? Didn't you take her away from me just because you protecting her.... What have I done to you for you to say that you protecting her from me? Do you hate that much I thought we were friends Skhalo but clearly you don't trust me enough to take care of your sister, have I ever treated you badly or betrayed you I don't wanna talk like a bitch but yabo wena you kaak 😡😡 you make me angry

Skhalo : Come on man Nandile will hate me

Gcaba : Not as much as I hate you, you can take those documents an leave my house

Skhalo : You know nawe Gcaba ukuth (You know that) you a danger in her life

Advertisement

you have enemies people who can kill my sister without thinking twice am protecting her from all that

Gcaba : I don't care

Skhalo : This will kill Sonke

Gcaba : You killed that kid yesterday Skhalo, he was crying to me saying that he wanted me but now he can't have me an that is because of you, am leaving all because of you those broken heart are on you including mine so vaya (leave)

Skhalo : Gca...

Gcaba : PHUMA NJA (Leave you dog) 😞

He said pulling a trigger but it missed Skhalo's arm

Gcaba : If you don't leave I will not miss 😞

Skhalo took the documents and left Gcaba angry throwing bottles across the room and shouting and cursing 😞 with tears rolling down his face, Skhalo didn't know how to tell his sister all this because it all happened because of him 😞

✘

✘

✘

✘

Skhalo was standing outside his house thinking about how will he will tell Nandile the news of Gcaba leaving 😞

Sonke : Uncle

Skhalo jumped cause he was lost in his thoughts

Sonke : Sorry didn't mean to scare you

Skhalo : Howzit boy?

Sonke : I was thinking here

Skhalo : Thinking about?

Sonke : I want to go an see my dad

Skhalo : Your dad?

Sonke : Gcaba

Skhalo : ****sigh**** when?

Sonke : Now I miss him an he's the only person who can cheer me up when am down, like right now

Skhalo : You can go upstairs an wear something comfy I will take you to him

Sonke : Sharp uncle you the best

Sonke went upstairs to get ready while Skhalo went to Nandile's room an he found her staring into space so he went inside the room

Skhalo : Nandile

Ndile : Not now Skhalo

Skhalo : I have something to tell you

Ndile : Skhalo please... 🖐️

Skhalo : Gcaba is going back to New York

Nandile's face shoot up cause she didn't believe her ears

Ndile : What?

Skhalo : He t...

Ndile : Take me to him

Skhalo : N..

Ndile : NOW THIS IS ALL YOUR FAULT TAKE ME TO HIM 😞

Nandile felt herself falling apart

Skhalo : What about Sonke?

Ndile : Oh my God I don't need this stress 😞 please take me to him Skhalo I don't want Sonke to see us like this please

Skhalo : I'll call Zama to take you there I will be with Sonke

Ndile : I don't care what you do Skhalo I don't 😞😞

Nandile was angry and was tearing up so badly, she was worried about her child with so much stress will the baby survive all this stress 😞 Skhalo called Zama who came fast cause she was also worried about Nandile, she was like a walking zombie so Zama took her to Gcaba's place after a while they were outside the house

Zama : Baby are you okay?

Ndile : I don't know Zama I feel numb

Zama : Don't you want to go and see the doctor?

Ndile : No I'll be okay

Zama : Are you sure?

Ndile : Yes

Nandile got out the car she was not sure if she wanted to see the doctor or not cause she can feel that she's feeling numb, maybe it a stress that what she thought that to herself, she got inside an there was no one in the lounge so she went upstairs an found Gcaba busy packing he was drunk but not that much he was not okay at all

Ndile : So it true, you are leaving me

Gcaba turned an saw his goddess standing in front of him he can see that she's stressed it written in her face an her whole body screams stress

Gcaba : Ba... Nandile

Ndile : Don't Gcaba please don't, I wanna know is it true you leaving me?

Gcaba : Am sorry

Ndile : So you are?

Gcaba kept quiet an looked down with a tear drop

Ndile : Why? 😞😞 oh my God I can't believe I trusted you with my heart Gcaba, how can you leave me, us? Sonke needs you am pregnant with your baby doesn't that count?

Gcaba : I can't bear losing you Nandile, if I can't have you than why will I live here? I mean I can't watch you playing happy family with another man Ndile : Fight!

Gcaba : I have no fight left in me

Ndile : You didn't fight for me Gcaba so you can't say you have no fight left in you Gcaba 😞 I love you an I can't lose you don't fo this to me

Gcaba went close to Nandile an pulled her to him, Nandile just sobbed loudly cause Gcaba to break 😞😞 cause he knew what he's doing will hurt her like this

Gcaba : Babe lis... Ndile : I don't wan....

Nandile felt something dropping down her legs like a liquid or something Ndile : Gc... Gcaba my baby

Gcaba : Huh?

Nandile pulled back from the hug an looked down she saw blood an her heart beated out of her chest

Ndile : My baby, MY BAAAABY GCABA

Insert 31

Nandile

I can't lose my child 😞 God please protect my child for me that was my prayer that kept ringing in my mind, I didn't want to hate Skhalo 😞, I didn't want to hate Gcaba for wanting to leave me an all that 😞 when we got to the hospital they were able to help me an the child, the doctor said that I have a lot of stress an that is not good for me an the child, I told myself that from now onwards my main focus will be on me and my two babies nothing else, I will let Gcaba go if he wants to, I will let Skhalo be cause he made it clear that he doesn't want me in his life, I mean what he did was uncalled for why would he tell me to forget about Gcaba whereas he is in love with his sister how is that I tell them that they can't date? How is that I tell my parents that they can't allow them to date even if they want to 🤔 but because am not that heartless I will just let them be 😞 someone entered my room an when I look up it is Gcaba, I just looked away he stood there breathing louder than normal I think he's scared just as I was scared, I think he's blaming him just as I am blaming him too, I think he wanna show his emotion but he's scared to be vulnerable, he so quiet and that

scares me cause I want him to talk so that I ignore him, I want to him to grovel so that I tell him I don't want him in my life but he's quiet and not saying anything at all

After like 30 min he walked out of the room than I heard like someone is hitting something hard outside maybe that's how he shows his emotion, he got back in

Gcaba : I'm sorry

When I turned his hands are bloody, he's not looking at me at all and I can see that he wanna cry but he's composing himself, I know he blames himself but I feel bad for him not, I pressed the buzzer and within a blink of an eye the nurses were in my room, he looked at me and looked at them I saw a panick mode in him

Me : Can you please take care of his hand

That's what I said than I turned away from him, as much as I wanted him to be weak but I didn't want it to happen at my

expense 😞 I heard the door closing and they were gone I just cried not only for me but for him too he's such a lost puppy as much as I want to be angry at him it will be hard I think I will have to go home for a few months maybe

Gcaba

I've never thought a girl's present will make me feel like this, I feel guilty, I feel incomplete, I feel weak at the knees, I feel stupid emotions that wants me to cry but I won't that's not me, I lost all my tears when I cried for my daughter, I lost all emotions that I built a wall between me and emotions now here comes a small little thing with no effort of being beautiful, with so many flaws, with so many scars 😊, so feisty she wanna change all that but I can't let her, I really need to stay away from her, I need to focus on our children and forget about other things, I just need to do that for myself and no one else

When she ordered the nurses to check me up I was so amazed cause I thought she hated me with passion 😞? the nurses did the things and I got out after that, I sat on the bench that was outside thinking about how my life changed in the past Months

my favourite cousin was my worst cousin, my brother Nka wanted to traffic a girl, my friend hates me for loving his sister ☹️, my father is still an asshole I tried for him to love me again but No he doesn't care at all 🤔♀️ he just wants me to always feel sad but I won't allow it someone called my name

"Gcaba"

I looked up it was Skhalo, he was looking at me so concerned I just looked down I don't want anyone feeling sorry for me

Skhalo : Are you okay? You so pink and what happened to your hand

Me : Nothing

Skhalo : Come on Gcaba

Me : Don't come on me Skhalo

I stood up and went to face him man to man cause he makes me angry he's the one who doesn't want to see me happy, he's the one who wants me to turn my back on his sister, he's the one who is scared that I will hurt his sister but in my heart I

know I want to protect her with my life, how will I tell him
cause he doesn't believe me 😞

Narrated

Skhalo looked at his friend and he saw pain in his eyes an he has never seen this in Gcaba ever since they became friends, did he make a bad decision that's what he is thinking, was he unfair for denying Gcaba to feel love from his sister? Did he make a mistake? That's what he is thinking about but he's scared that one of them will hurt each other an who will be there to fix that? It's him so he's just scared for both of them, what if he let them be only for them to hurt one another? For them to hate each other? Or worse he ends up losing a friend too

Skhalo : Am scared...

He looked at Gcaba who looked at him blankly, Skhalo was thinking but ended up saying out loud

Gcaba : You scared of what?

Skhalo : A lot Gcaba, do you think that I hate? Do you think I did this to spite you? Nooo am scared that you'll hurt one another, Gcaba you vulnerable and she's also vulnerable, you can hide all you like Gcaba but you have unfinished business with your dad, she also have unfinished business with Sam...

Gcaba : DON'T SAY HIS NAME

everyone turned and looked at them but Skhalo didn't care

Skhalo : Fine I won't say his name, how do you think you'll make it together? You'll always be scared that your father might do something worse than what he did to my sister, Nandile will always think that no man is different from that animal, you have to deal with your issues, fine I was a pussy for doing what I did but I was doing it for the both of you

Gcaba : You kn...

Gcaba's phone rang and it was an unsaved number so he answered the phone

Gcaba : Hello

Person :

Gcaba : Hello

Person : We need to talk

Gcaba : What?

Person : Come an see me it's urgent

Gcaba : You must be cra...

Person : Please Qiniso

He dropped the call leaving Gcaba wondering what does his father wants from him, he looked at Skhalo for a moment than he left just like that

✘

✘

✘

✘

Gcaba went to the Prison but in his mind he was wondering what does his father wants from him, never have he called and summoned him ever since he got arrested, he did all the

procedure than sat down waiting for his father, he came in and smiled but a conniving smile not an innocent one 🤔😊🤔

Him : You came

Gcaba : Yeah

Him : Didn't think you would

Gcaba : What am I doing here?

Him : You look so much pink and drained, was the tough guy crying?

Gcaba : Sakhisizwe 🤔

Him : I'm dad to you son 😊

Gcaba : In your dreams

Him : What did you bring for your daddy? 😊

Gcaba : You know what am leaving

He stood up and attempted to leave

Him : Come on sit down

Gcaba : Sa...

Him : SIT DOWN 😞

Gcaba : That tone doesn't scared me 😊

Him : Thought as much 😊 you really are my son 😞 just sit down please

Gcaba : That's more like it

Gcaba sat down and Sakhisizwe looked at him for sometime

Him : They are releasing me

Gcaba : What did you just say?

Gcaba thought that his ears are defeating him or did he just say he's going to be a free man? 🤔

Him : I'm being released on Monday

Gcaba : When is Monday? Monday Monday? The coming one 🤔

Him : Yes

Gcaba : But your sentence..

Him : Good Behaviour

Gcaba : Good behaviour wena? Ithi uyadlala baba (Tell me you joking)

Him : I wish I do have time to joke but am not

Gcaba : Why are you telling me this?

Him : I just wanted to tell you cause I know one day you'll come here to make me your punching bag like always and don't find me 🤔♀ it best I tell you

Gcaba : Stop making it feels like you a good father just because you told me this

Him : I can never be a good father I know but am just telling you cause you my son as much as am an ass for days but you still my son yabo?

Gcaba : Mxm 😊😏

Him : Tell me Qiniso, why do you hate me? Is it because of your mother or your daughter

Gcaba : Wh...

Him : Just answer me Melusi

Gcaba : Because of my daughter

Him : What about your mother?

Gcaba : She's your responsibility I don't care Sakhisizwe 😏

Him : Does that make you any better than me?

Gcaba : I don't give a fuck about you say but my mother cheated and I hate that but you had no reason to kill her

Him : Don't turn this, you don't care about your mother, about me killing her 😊

Gcaba : I don't know where you going with this question but I don't have time for this

Him : If I just killed your mother only that means you would have forgiven me, you would've visited me like nothing happened but just because your daughter also died you hate me for that, you bloody heartless

Gcaba : Com...

Him : You no better than me, you very very heartless like father like son 🤔😊

Gcaba clenches his jaws cause he doesn't wanna be labeled like that, he's not like his father an he can never be or is he like that?

Insert 32

Gcaba

I went to my house after Prison I just couldn't face anyone I mean my father is coming out 😞 what could stop him from hurting my children? I don't care about me but I'm more worried about my children and the woman that I love with all of my heart, Yes Nandile captured my heart more than I thought she would but ke I guess I can only have that in my heart and protect her from afar I'm sure she'll be okay 🙏♀ I really need to sleep am so tired when I got home I saw Nka's car and believe me I was really not looking forward to this 🙏 I got inside the house dragging my feet

Nka : Sonke look at your father walking like a zombie

My face shoot up cause I was not expecting to see him here 😊
my son

Me : Ohhh hey champ 😊

Nka : Aibo you'd swear you seeing your girlfriend

Me : Ayy wena 😊 Sonke there's nothing called a girlfriend neh?

Sonke : Am old dad 😊 I know what a girlfriend is 🤔♀

Nka : That my boy 😊😊😊

When he calls me a dad I swear my world stop and it takes me forever to recover I'm smiling like a retard

Nka : I wish I could capture this moment 😊😊

Me : Whatever so Sonke when did you come this side?

Sonke : Aibo I told Sk....

Me : haaaa, aa it's uncle to you

Sonke : Then why he doesn't want me to stay with you?

Me : Cause he wants what best for you

Sonke : You are what best for me

Me : So...

Sonke : No I want to stay with you not him please Dad I promise I'll a good boy

Nka : Does he abuse you?

Me : Ayy wena usile lo ngamnaki Sonke (This one is foolish don't mind him Sonke) well I think you will have to talk to mummy about that

Sonke : Okay I'm sure she won't mind though, mummy loves you

Me : 😊

Sonke : I know when a person is in love

Nka : Aibo how old are you?

Sonke : It not a matter of my age

Nka : It a matter of what?

Sonke : Of seeing things

Nka : Ihhe 😊

Sonke : Nawe I can see that you gay 🙄

Nka : YEYYYY YEYYWENA

Sonke : I hit a nerve 😂😂

Nka : Mxm 😊

Me : Which remind I have never seen you with a girl

Sonke : He's gay, anyways am 8 to answer your question

Nka : 😊

Sonke : 😄

We just joked around and laughed I really enjoyed being with them they really did take my mind off things, later on I got ready to go an see Nandile I did my hygiene cause I felt stinking 😞 after that visit

✕

✕

✕

✕

I drove to the hospital to see Ndile, when I got there I saw some teenage girl crying on the corner I just don't know if I should pass her or not, cause I mean some of them are thieves they lure you into believing that they are in danger only to find that the bitches are hungry an need money to survive 🤔♀ I went to check on her

Me : Hey

She got startled, she was so heavily pregnant ☹️ isn't this kid young for being pregnant ☹️♀️

Her : Hey **sniff**

Me : What's wrong are you okay?

Her : Yea I'm okay

Me : You crying

Her : I think these are just hormones

Me : Oh

Her : Plus I had a bad day

Me : Wanna talk about it?

Her : You so intimidating, how can I talk to you

She was smiling through her tears I just chuckled cause I get that a lot

Me : You can try me 😊

Her : Well I was dumped by my boyfriend

Me : Why?

Her : He said that he was not ready for this child, it's too much for him

Me : How old are you?

Her : I'm 25

Me : What? 😊 I thought you were 15

Her : Jeez that young, my papa would have killed me for falling pregnant at that age

Me : Let me hope your papa will kill the dickhead who dumped you

Her : He would, I swear to God he's dead, but am not gonna tell him

Me : Why?

Her : what if he kills him?

Me : He kills him, I for one know that I would have killed any fucker who would have done that to my own daughter

Her : You have a daughter?

Me : I had a daughter

Her : Shame am sorry

Me : It fine 😊 so now lighten up and go see your papa

Her : I'll see her tomorrow 😊

Me : Okay that's good ,have a safe trip

Her : Thank you so much for the talk, hope the girl you came to see knows how awesome you are uncle 😊😊

Me : Am glad you don't see me as a boyfriend 😊

Her : You so old

Me : Ouch 😊 no need to rub it in

Her : 😊😊 am sorry

I have to go thanks once again

She left me standing there and

went to this giant car 🤖 how old is this child again 🙄🙄

Her : It's my papa's car I don't have a car

Me : 😊 thought as much

Her : 😊 bye

She drove away I just chuckled while shaking my head and went inside to find Skhalo still sitting where I left him

Me : Sure

Skhalo : Sharp

Me : Any news?

Skhalo : She's okay

Me : Went in to see her?

Skhalo : Am not allowed

Me : what? 🤔

Skhalo : Am telling you bro she told the Security team to don't let me in 😊

Me : What about me cause we in the same boat 😊

Skhalo : Am sure she does wanna see you, considering that she's pregnant with your child 🤔♀

Me : Let me go an check

Skhalo : Gcaba

Me : Sure

Skhalo : Are you okay?

Me : My.... Yea I'm okay

Skhalo : Alright you'll meet me here once you done

Me : Okay

I walked inside the ward and found Nandile sleeping I just got in sat beside her, am kinda stressed guys this thing about my father coming out of jail tomorrow is eating me alive

Ndile : Gcaba

Me : Hey 😊 you good?

Ndile : Yeah how are you? How's your hand?

Me : My hand 🤔

Ndile : Yeah earlier on

Me : Oh

Snap my hand is injured I forgot about that 🤔♀ this thing about my father is messing with head

Ndile : Are you okay?

Me : Am okay

Ndile : Try again 😊

Me : He's coming out

Ndile : who's coming out?

Me : My father

Ndile : Oh my God am so sorry bab.... Gcaba

Me : It fine

Ndile : You not fine

Me : I'll try to be fine, yaz he asked me a question

Ndile : what question

Me : that do I hate him for killing my daughter or for my mother

Ndile : What kind of a question is that, of cause for both of them 😊

Me : That's the thing

Ndile : I don't understand

I stood up and went to look outside the window I swallowed my spit hard 😞

Me : I dont hate him for my mother, I don't hate him for killing my mother, my biological mother 🤔 what does that make me a bad person right? I mean Nandile what kind of a son will think it was perfect not even good but perfect that his father killed his mother, am the same as him, I'm heartless he said that am not different kuyena, that it's like father like son 😞💔

I was so lost in my thought that I didn't even see that Nandile was now hugging me from behind I just cried silently

Ndile : You not a bad person, I think the reason why you don't hate him for your mother, it's that you blame her for cheating on your father cause it ended up taking away your daughter 😞 you have every right to be angry, to hate her and to be sad I'm sure one day you'll heal and be able to forgive your mother

Me : I feel like a bad person Nandile I mean who hates his mother? Who would love another mother who's not his biological mother but hate his own mother?

Ndile : A person who's hurt sthandwa sam I want you to forget about this focus on the matter at hand right now that your father is coming out and how to deal with that

I turned an looked at her while sniffing

Me : Wait wait what did you call me?

Ndile : Stop being silly ke 😊

She tried to wiggle herself but I was not letting her

Me : Well am not letting you go that easily

Ndile : You so red Me : Trying to avoid my question I see

Ndile : I thought we were still sad

Me : Well yeah am sad Ndile : Don't be you'll be okay

Me : Who? Ndile : Gcaba Me : Ndile : I have to rest

Me : Thank you

Ndile : We in this t..... You on your own but I... **clear throat**

Me : 😊 we in this together now come give me a hug

Ndile : 😊 perv

We hugged this is home, she makes me laugh, cry, sad, guilty,
she makes me feel everything in the same time

Inserts 33

Nandile

Today I'm going home and I just don't wanna see Skhalo but what can I do cause he called my parents and they are coming today afternoon 🤔♀ I just don't know what is he trying to achieve cause my parents loves uGcaba, my mother told me 🤔♀ but ke am sure he will tell them what he told me about how Gcaba is, which I don't care I mean Gcaba has always had my back, he carried my burdens, he loved me with my flaws and he complimented my scars, he just loved me so I don't think him being a criminal can stop me from wanting to be with him but ke I think we need a break from each other to see things, learn things maybe just maybe we cab finally be together

Gcaba : **clears throat**

I turned he smiled at me and I just smiled while looking at him

Gcaba : So you just gonna stand there no hug?

Me : It depends 😊

Gcaba : On what?

Me : Are you taking me home?

Gcaba : Obviously

Me : 😊 I'm coming ke

I went to hug him he was so comfy like I felt home with him like he have that aura that spells protection without even trying 😊

Gcaba : I wish we can just hold each other like this but ke we have to go

Me : Yeah we have too 😊

I went to take my bag but he snatched it away from me with a frown

Gcaba : I won't even say anything

Me : 😊

He chuckled and walked out I followed him, we went to his car and we drove off

Me : Are you okay?

Gcaba : Sure

Me : Today is Monday

Gcaba : I know

Me : I can spend the last 40 minutes with you

Gcaba : No don't worry I can handle this

Me : I insist

Gcaba : Really?

I looked at him and he just flashed a smile an I just shook my hand while taking his hand to mine

Me : Yeah really 😊

Gcaba : We can go to this park I know

Me : Park Mr Gcaba

Gcaba : Kant what do you want babe? A restaurant or what?

Me : No Park is okay, but first let us buy something to eat

Gcaba : Okay

Me : What time is he coming out?

Gcaba : He's already out

Me : Who told you?

Gcaba : Ayanda 😞

Me : Let's go to the shop

We walked inside the shop and I can see that he's not okay at all, I just don't get what it is with this guy who is his father anyway cause am sure Gcaba can defeat him, I wonder what scares him but am sure I'll find out soon once he's ready to talk

: My My My

We turned an I saw a handsome old man standing in front of us and I saw Gcaba's face changing an it kicked in that this is his father, how can a man looking like this be heartless as Gcaba say he is 🤔

Gcaba : Sakhisizwe

Sizwe : Qiniso, I believe this is your girlfriend

Gcaba : Yeah she is you will stay away from her if you know what's good for you Sakhisizwe

Sizwe : Don't worry yourself my son I won't do anything to her
👩 if I wanted to do something I would have done it while in jail
😊 cause I knew about her the first day your encountered

He smiled and walked away but turned with a smile I swear I would have thought it a genuine smile, okay guys I know I have a thing of not seeing a person who's evil and whatever, but I swear this guy is good at convincing that he's a good guy I'm so confused right now

Sizwe : Another thing Melusi I wanna see you tonight I'll send you the details

Gcaba : Even in a million ways I'll never you dead to me

Sizwe : See you later 😊

Gcaba cursed under her breath yoo I think I've seen Gcaba angry but right this moment he's so scary that it scares the shit out of me

Gcaba

I watched him walking away I wish I could just kill him right now, he knows that since he now knows about Nandile I would do anything he wants me to do, that's the thing about my father, he's well known, he's eyes are all over, he's such a bad taste 😞 I feel angry cause right now I'm at the point where I have to protect my small family cause I don't think I'll survive if I was to lose them too

Ndile : Look at me

She was so small and she wanted me to look at her 😞 she wants to carry my pain, my anger, my rage, my fears, my pain and my grieve but I couldn't let her, I won't do that to her she means a lot to me for that

Me : am okay 😊 still wanna go to the park?

Ndile : No need to act all strong with me you know that right?

She's scared, I can see fear in her eyes, am sure she thinks that I will end up like Sambulo if I carry this anger alone but that's what make me different from him cause he lied that he wanted to change pretended to be something that he's not, but as for me I won't pretend, I can't pretend, am angry and that won't change even if I talk about it, but that won't make me Sambulo cause I don't think I'll keep the hand that made me beat Ndile up, this girl right her is so small, so fragile how can yoy kick something like that, I love her so much for that and I will strive, kick, scream, curse, shoot, die trying for her to be safe, for her to laugh, for her to always be happy cause right now I don't care about my own happiness she's all I need and want for the rest of my life

Me : Yes I know, am not acting strong my love, I just want us to be happy okay can you do that for me?

Ndile : Yea let's buy this food an get out of here 😊

Me : Thank you for being here with me

Ndile : Always 😊😊

Me : I needed to hear that 😊❤️

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

After a while I was alone reality started kicking in, what if this guy kills me tonight I mean I was the only one remaining to the family 😬 he killed everyone but not me cause I was not at home 💔 what if he wants to finish his job

Advertisement

all my life I thought I can challenge my father but he still remains a father to me, a person that can make me weak without even trying cause he's my father, the person who makes me hate him and love him just because he's my father, the person who can brings out the worse in me but a little hope 😬 because he's my father, am afraid of him and he knows that which is the reason why he does what he does, my phone rang while in my thoughts

Me : Hello

Ayanda : Boss it's time

Me : Yeah am going right now

Ayanda : Do you want us to come?

Me : No I need to do this alone

Ayanda : Boss are you sure?

Me : That man is dangerous he will kill you

Ayanda : He won't see us

Me : Ayanda let me do this alone, if I don't come back you know what to do regarding Nandile and Sonke

Ayanda : Okay boss

Me : Now be well okay

Ayanda : Sharp

Me : An ayanda switch off that tracker

Ayanda : What tracker?

Me : You know what am talking about

He chuckled and hung up the phone I know my boys care about they've been trying to call me and I have not answered the call even Skhalo was calling 😞 I wore my all black and decided to say a little prayer cause my mother (Nka's mother) taught me how to than I went to my car an drove to this place am going

to, my phone rang and I answered cause I thought it was
Ayanda

Me : Hello

Ndile : Gcaba please don't go

Me : Nandile , wait

I find a spot an parked my car there cause I can hear worry in
her voice

Me : Nandile

Ndile : Am here

Me : Listen to me babe please right now you have to be strong
if not for me but for our children, I will come back for you I
promise

Ndile : A promise is a

Us : Promise

Me : I know I'll come back and we will the most happy Family
ever

Ndile : I **sniff** I....

Me : I know I love you too 😊 just be happy, be there for your family don't let your mind go with me just be there where you are okay?

Ndile : Okay

Me : I love you both

Ndile : We love you too sthandwa sam

Me : Kiss Sonke for me 😊😊😊😊

Ndile : I will

Me : I have to go MaZikhali please be strong for me

Ndile : **sniff** I will 😊

Me : Good girl now let me proceed with my way

Ndile : Okay bye

Me : Bye

She hung up the phone and I sighed and drove my car, after a while I got into the place it was like a warehouse of some sort I walked to the door and there he was standing there with a smile ,I went close to him and he pointed a gun at me I froze and a gun went off I closed my eyes and opened at them again the gun was nowhere what just happened

Sizwe : I told you not to bring anyone

Me : What?

Sizwe : You thought am gonna shoot you? Melusi how old are you

Me : 36

Sizwe : How old were you when I got arrested?

Me : 16

Sizwe : which means I've been in jail for 10 years, if I wanted to kill you wouldn't I have done that during that 10 years? I was shooting that mother fucker who was following you 🤔♀

I thought to myself why would Ayanda send someone to follow me 🤔♀

Sizwe : I must say your boys really cares about you 😊 I admire them a lot well I didn't kill him but am sure his leg or arm is injured right now

See what I meant he's an animal, how did he see him? He's the most dangerous ass hole I've seen in my life

Sizwe : Back to why I called you here, Melusi I know my son that all your 10 years you thought I hated you, I don't love or even care about you that's not true

Me : Spare me the details, you may not hate me but what you did to me can never be undone

Sizwe : I didn't do anything to you

Me : YOOO LOMNTU (THIS PERSON) 🙄👤♀️

Sizwe : Listen to me Thembela I can never hate you, I did hate your mother for what she did but you never

Me : IT'S NOT ABOUT YOU DOING SOMETHING TO ME PHYSICAL BUT EMOTIONALLY YOU KILLED ME SIZWE, YOU KILLED MY DAUGHTER AND MY BROTHER 🙄 I WENT THERE SIZWE TO FIND THEM I SCREAMED, I CRIED, I CURSED BUT NOTHING MY OWN FUCKEN BROTHER WAS DEAD 🙄 DEAD AN YOU TELLING ME THAT YOU DON'T HATE ME? DO YOU EVEN KNOW WHAT IS HATE?

Sizwe : Listen to me....

Me : NOOOO YOU LISTEN TO ME SIZWE....

sizwe : SHUTTTTTT UPPPP!!!!

I felt the need to take out my gun cause he was angering me
right now

Sizwe : You see how you feel right now is what I want you to
feel, the anger, the hatred, the rage not the fear, I didn't give
birth to ivaka (weakling)

Me : What do you want from me

Sizwe : I want your attention, I want your love my son, I want
your respect, I want the bond we once had, I want to protect
you always knowing that you have my back to

Me : Never

Sizwe : what? 😊😊

Me : I SAID NEVER!!!

Sizwe : My son Gcaba, Thembela, Nombela, Mtoto, Ngwabe,
Siphogwana sembuti, Shibe, Vungama I'm so proud of you

Me : 😞😞

Sizwe : I don't hate you an I can never do something that will
make you hate me never 😊

: Gcaba

I turned an I couldn't believe my eyes, I felt weak, I felt defeated what are you doing here? What are you doing here? What are doing here? You not suppose to be here, you not suppose to be here oh God that what I was saying in my mind, my heart, my brain, yooooo 💔💔💔 this is not happening, this is not happening, this is not happening 💔

Sizwe : Never 😞

Bonga : Gcaba imina bhutii (It's me brother)

Insert 34

Narrated

Gcaba couldn't register what was happening, is his brother really alive? What happened that day? Did his father kill his mother and his daughter? 😞 Gcaba was just terrified and wanted some answers, he can't hug his brother like nothing happened, he can't cry for him like nothing happened, he can't pretend as if he's happy like nothing happened, they betrayed him both of them, why didn't he call Gcaba? Why didn't he try to reach out to Gcaba? Did he hate him like that?

Sizwe : Melusi

He looked at his father, the person who he looked up to when he was growing up, he wanted to strict like him, he wanted to be loving like him, he wanted to be the person who work hard for his family just like how he did, but that changed the day that fire happened, that same day hardened my heart, that same day made me obsessed with fire, it driven me to the hating person that he is today Gcaba was so angry than hurt

Bonga : Gcaba

Gcaba : You know what I don't have time for this, you both are the same

Sizwe : I was protecting you Gcaba

Gcaba : Protecting me from what? You ruined me Sakhisizwe, you killed a long time ago, you see the person standing right in front of you is no longer the old Gcaba, you killed me that day I saw the house in flames, I thought of how painful my brother is burning, how painful my daughter is burning I don't bloody care about that woman you called your wife, Yes Dad am like you am heartless I hate her for the same reason you hating her for, she killed our family, I killed her lover I watched him burning because of those flames I saw when I thought you died

He said pointing a finger at his brother, his old brother to be exact with only 2 years

Bonga : Gca....

Gcaba : Stop calling me, I have to go you both are dead to me wena carry on being dead just die 😞

He walked away angry and his father couldn't let him go

Sizwe : Your daughter is alive

Gcaba : I don't care

He walked away to his car and drove in full force thinking about everything that is happening in his life 😞 he drove until he stopped at the car when he looked around he was in front of Skhalo's house he sighed cause he wanted to see Nandile, she's the only thing that can make sense right now he walked in to the house and knocked

Person : Come in

He said with a bold voice and that's when he remembered that Nandile's parents are this side

Mom : Oh hey Melusi come here baba 😊

He went to Nandile's mother and they hugged, Nandile and Skhalo can see that he's not okay

Dad : Ndodana how are you?

Gcaba : Am good how are you?

Mom : We good baby, we were just scolding Skhalo for what he did

Gcaba : What did he do mama?

Mom : The whole you an Nandile thing

Gcaba : He was just looking out for his sister like an old brother that he is

Dad : Yeah we know that but our daughter is happy and we can see that you are good for her as long as you will do what is right by her

Gcaba : Always 😊 always!

Skhalo : Mom and Dad don't you want you want us to go out and eat some lovely staff

Mom : Yoo I've been wanting that Ice Cream tatakhe

Dad : Ayy maan it's late

Skhalo : Aibo papa it's not late grab your jacket we going

Dad : What about Nandile and Melusi? 🤔

Skhalo : They'll figure it out angan you said it's okay for them to date 🤔♀

Dad : Yes I said but....

Mom : There's no but take your jacket we going

Dad : Fine 🤔♀ Melusi don't do something nasty to my daughter

Ndile : Aibo tata 😞

Gcaba : No I won't 😊

Dad : At least now you laughing for a moment there I thought you have stress or something

Gcaba : No am okay baba

Dad : Good

They took their jackets and left the house, Melusi stood up and went to pour a strong drink than went to the balcony Nandile followed him cause she was now worried, they stood there quietly cause she can see that he's not okay at all but she didn't want to ask him anything he will talk when he's ready she just wanna be there for him

Gcaba : Come here

He opened his arms and they hugged but it was not the comfy hug she's used to, it's cold like he's distant

Gcaba : Are you feeling something different?

Ndile : Your hug is cold

Gcaba : That's how cold I was when everything happened a long time ago

They pulled out and Ndile looked at him straight in his eyes

Gcaba : Stop looking straight in my eyes

Ndile : I wanna find you I don't like it if you like this 😞

Gcaba : It's funny because back then I used to do things alone with no one to talk to, but when I left that warehouse you were the only thing in my mind like I wanted to see you to cool down, I wanted to meet the Cold Gcaba I was when everything happened, the angry Gcaba, the no feelings Gcaba, I don't know how to feel Ndile

Advertisement

I don't feel sad, I don't feel like crying I just feel like the old horrible Gcaba, I see fire in my eyes ♀, I see flames like am thirsty for fire and for blood to be shed

Ndile : Look at me

Gcaba : I don't want to Nandile, you my weakness, you my safe place, you make me good kant am evil right now I need to be evil

Ndile : No you don't have to just look at me please



Gcaba raised his eyes and he saw it, that need to cry and scream

Ndile : You can cry, you with me right now we're alone you can cry

Gcaba : No I don't wanna be weak right now

Ndile : Listen to me with me you'll be weak if need be, I don't want you holding back what you feeling just because you don't want to be weak, you are human not an animal, I don't know what you going through but you need to heal and for that to happen you need scream, cry, breakdown, fight your demons

don't let them dictate your life I won't let you Gcaba you helped get rid of my nightmares, you helped me overcome my fears, you helped me become strong, you helped me now am able to laugh without thinking about Sambulo, you healed me now it's my time to return the favour, if you wanna cry please

Gcaba just went on her knees while hugging Nandile's legs with tears in his eyes, Nandile went on her knees too and hugged him, he just cried for everything, for mourning kant those people are alive, for turning cold for people who are alive, for hating himself for not saving them kant they are alive, for hating his father kant he saved them, for everything nje he cried  that broke Nandile's heart cause apart from everything Gcaba is human too and he can't pretend as if he's not feeling anything, that can only make him be like Sambulo and take out his anger on another person which is wrong  after a while they were now sitting on the floor with Nandile's holding Gcaba tight and the comfy Gcaba was coming back

Gcaba : Thank you

Ndile : You welcome anything for you

Gcaba : I guess you wanna know what happened

Ndile : You can tell me when you ready

Gcaba : Am ready babe 😊

Ndile : You sure 😊

Gcaba : Yes am ready or you can just give me a kiss

Ndile : Will a kiss makes you happy?

She said that with a small voice like a kid, that made Gcaba chuckled and he lifted her up and sha sat on his lab facing him

Gcaba : Now where's my kiss?

Nandile baby kissed Gcaba, he just laughed and claimed her lips, they kissed and after a while he pulled out while catching their breath he looked at her

Gcaba : You know that if we carry on the nasty part will happen and your father warned me

Ndile : I know right? So I'll just get off you 😊 I don't want my father bombing you

Gcaba : Can you imagine, but don't get off

He said that holding her butts tight but seductively making Nandile choke on her saliva ,Gcaba couldn't help but laugh Nandile pinch him slightly

Ndile : Perv

Gcaba : You love me kodwa 😊

Ndile : I do 😊 but I can stop

Gcaba : Keep telling yourself that lie 😊

Ndile : Mxm what will I do with you 🤔

Gcaba : Just hug me your boyfriend is back

Ndile : 😊😊

Nandile hugged him and he was back that made her happy

😊😊😊🤔

Ndile : Thank you

Gcaba : No thank you 😊 you made me realise something

Ndile : What's that?

Gcaba : I'll show you

Ndile : When?

Gcaba : It's a surprise hawu 😊

Ndile : 😊

Gcaba : I love you 😊❤️

Ndile : I will love you too the day you show me the surprise 🤔♀

Gcaba : I'm so sure you'll love me that day 😊😊

Ndile : Can't wait yaz 😞😞 give me a hint

Gcaba : No just wait Ndile

Ndile : Weeeee 🤔♀

Gcaba : 😊😊 anyways back to my story

Ndile : Am listening

Gcaba : I went to warehouse to my father

Ndile : Yes

Gcaba : My brother is alive

Ndile : What? 😬

Gcaba : I don't know if my father said that my daughter is alive or I was just dreaming

Ndile : You saw your brother?

Gcaba : Yes I saw him

Ndile : That means your daughter is alive

Gcaba : Yeah it means that, you know I wanna meet her I know it been a while without seeing her cause I thought she was dead, I wonder will she loves me or something, am just not ready to see her I just don't know Ndile and believe me sthandwa sam I know that you were so looking to giving me a child Am so grateful babe nothing changes, our child will be the best thing that ever happened to me 😊

Ndile : what you talking about? Oh my God babe that's good news right? I mean your daughter is alive woow 😊😊

Gcaba : You glad?

Ndile : Aibo am so happy babr Why would I be angry?

Gcaba : I mean in the movies girlfriend become angry if you bring a long timr child

Ndile : We not in the movies Gcaba, am happy an am sure your daughter will be thrilled to know you

Gcaba : 😊😊 where did I get you

Ndile : I don't know but what I know that am precious jewellery that you don't wanna lose

Gcaba : Never I don't wanna lose you 😊😊 you my life

Ndile : Am so happy for you

They looked at each other an Gcaba knew that this is his home and he don't wanna lose it at all

Insert 35

Gcaba

Last night was amazing with Nandile but I had to go back home cause her parents were there, I decided to go an see my daughter although I'm not ready to see my father cause am still angry at them for what they did to me 😞😡 I took my phone an called him he answered on the forth ring

Sizwe : Hello

Me : Send me the address I want to meet her

Sizwe : Okay my s...

I dropped the call cause I don't have time for what he was about to say cause it's a lie am not his son in fact I'll never be his son, I did my morning hygiene after that I went downstairs got myself something to eat while at my brother got in with my little sister

Me : Can't you guys knock?

Sis : Aibo give us a break bo

Nka : Tell him 😊

Me : Where's Sonke?

Sis : We took him to his mother

Me : When?

Nka : Just now

Sis : Anything to eat

She went to the kitchen, well Sonke was visiting my parents the past days so that's why he was not with Nandile yesterday, ever since he was nursed by my mother he's very fond of her a lot 😊

Nka : You going somewhere?

Me : Yeah was going to do an errand

Nka : Normally you were black 🤔♀ when you know 😬

Me : Oh no I decided to try something different

Nka : 😊 unlike you, I wonder what are you up to 🤔

Sis : Yooo this sauce is so nice

Nka : What are you eating?

Sis : Ayy you wanna eat my food, when you ask like that

Nka : Aibo am just asking

Sis : 😊

Me : I'd love to stay and joke around but I have to go

Sis : Okay we will lock the house when we go home

Me : No I want yol out

Nka : Aibo fuseg hawu 😊

Me : Am not joking

They ignored me, nka went to the kitchen as for my sister she went to the lounge to watch tv and I just chuckled cause this is a losing battle, I took my car keys and walked away

Me : I better not find my house on fire zinja (dogs)

Sis : Haaaaambaaaa 😊

Nka : Uxosha ban umnganakhe lo (who is he chasing out) 😊

I just laughed and walked away to my car and drove off am just scared to meet my daughter for the first time as a grown ass woman 🤔♀️ I wonder how is she like, is she like my sister 🤔♀️, is she sweet? Is she sour? Is she heartless, where was she living and with who? Does she have all her body parts 🤔♀️ I'm just overwhelmed by all of this

✕

✕

✕

✕

After a while I got outside the big house I wonder when did he have time to but this big house, or my daughter was living here while he was in jail, or this is Bonga's house 🤔♀️ let me just ring the intercom, after that I was let in, I just sighed and went inside the yard, there were so many cars in the yard but that was not my concern at the moment if you know what I mean

Me : Anybody home

Sizwe came to the door and told me to come in, I just went inside the house and it was covered with armed guys more like bodyguards, well this is not new to me cause this was the

environment I grew up in, my father has always been that person who protected his family at all cost including my mother when she was alive

Me : Am here to see her

Sizwe : She's out at the moment but she'll come back just now

Me : Okay

Sizwe : Anything to drink?

Me : No, who was she living with?

Sizwe : She was living with the helper I took her to that day of the fire

Me : Who?

Sizwe : Mama Sindi

Me : Oh

Mama Sindi was one of our helper while growing up, she was so kind and I was very fond of her a lot

Me : where is she?

Sizwe : She went to visit her family

Me : Okay, did she know about me?

Sizwe : Yes she knew that you are alive

Me : Alive and where?

Sizwe : You busy with work but one day you'll visit

Me : one day? 21 years is not one day

Sizwe : I didn't know what to say to her

Me : You were suppose to give me my child Sizwe I would have took care of her

Sizwe : She was never gonna be safe

Me : what? Am not a pussy Sizwe I can protect the people I love you of all people know that

Sizwe : You'll never understand

Me : Mxm I don't wanna understand vele 🤔♀️🤔♀️

I heard commotion coming from the door and my eyes became wild cause I wad not expecting this at all and please God don't tell me that this is true 🤔🤔💔

Her : Papa am back

Remember the girl who was pregnant and crying at the hospital? She's is my daughter 😞 how can I not see my own daughter? How can I not feel the connection between us yooo I feel like crying but I just looked at Sizwe

Sizwe : Come this side

She came to the lounge and looked at me she smiled

Her : I know you 😊 you cheered me up the other day

Sizwe : You have met?

Her : Yes we've met

Me : Are you okay?

Her : Yes am okay now that you here 😊

Me : What do you mean?

Her : I've longed for this day all my life

Me : What day?

Her : The day where I'll come home and find my dad sitting in the lounge, laughing or smiling at me 😊 when I came back from that hospital I went to my room and looked at the photos that Mama Sindi gave me of you, I knew that the person I was with was my biological father, I longed for this day more than anything, I always asked papa in the prison why you not visiting he told me that you thought I was dead

I looked at my father in confusion and he looked away

Her : Yes at first he told me that one day you'll come just that you a busy man, I was so sad and always cried asking myself why don't you love me but at the age of 14 I decided to ask my papa what's the real story behind you not coming to check on me

he told me the that you a busy man but I told him that am old enough to handle the truth now cause I could see that he wad hiding something he told me the truth that's when I started to love you, to warm up to the idea of meeting you one day,

I looked at this girl explaining that she forgave me for not being there for her a long time ago like how is that even possible 🤔♀

how can you do that? I for one won't do that at all in fact I would scream and curse an even kicking cause of the hard heart I have ☹️

Sizwe : Nana are you sure that you okay with all of this?

Her : Yes papa am okay

I just can't be here, my mind is racing now I expected fire from her not this kind hearted girl in front of me, no wonder that dickhead I will havr to kill now denied the child she's pregnant with ☹️♀️

Sizwe : Qiniso

Me : Mmmm

Sizwe : Can you say something

Me : How old are you?

Her : I'm 21 years old

Me : You lied

Her : Yes I didn't want you to judge me

Me : What is your name?

Her : Thandolwam I was told that you have me that name

Me : Ohh

I just stood up and went to look outside the window with confusion I mean I don't know if I should be happy or angry or sad 🤔♀ what reaction is needed if it's like this?

Sizwe : Nana can you leave me with your father?

Her : Okay

I think she left the room cause now I can feel Sizwe beside me

Sizwe : Are you okay?

Me : I don't know, why didn't you tell me that she knows me like this? How is it that she's the one who felt the connection not me? 🤔♀ I mean she's my daughter Sizwe

Sizwe : I don't know I thought she will handle the situation differently not this understanding

Me : I think this is just an act, a person can't be this cool

Sizwe : Maybe she's different

Me : Different? There's nothing different here Baba she's angry and it scares me cause the day she exploded will be the day all of us will have to look out especially me

Sizwe : You can't say that

Me : I can read people so well Sizwe, that girl is angry and one day you'll get what am saying, you can't be that cool for finding someone who was not there like all your life cause she was 4 when I lost her ☹

Sizwe : I'll talk to her

Me : What if this girl was stalking me the other day? I mean pregnant girl always go to the hospital for check up, what if her boyfriend didn't dump her it was all just an act?

Sizwe : Her boyfriend du.....I guess she was devastated not stalking you

Me : I can deal with a lot of things but not a silent killer ☹☹☹☹☹

✘

✘

✘

✘

Narrated

Thandolwam was in her room pacing up and down while holding Gcaba's photo she was so angry but needed her Father's love

Lwami : 😞

She was so angry that he didn't fight for her, she was so angry that she didn't feel the connection between the two of them the other day, she's angry that after all these years he doesn't seem happy to see her, but she's know that Gcaba is confuse because she won't let him see the real her, she took the phone and called mama Sindi who answered almost immediately

Mama : My baby Lwami 😊😊😊

Lwami : Mama he's home 😞😞😞😞

Mama : You knew that your papa will be home nje

Lwami : No I mean my father he's here

Mama : Oh God my baby, I wish I was there for you

Lwami : I don't know how to feel am so angry at him mama
😞😞

Mama : Am so sorry babey

Lwami : He was suppose to fight for me but he didn't

Mama : He thought you died

Lwami : A father will go through fire, broken glasses to save her daughter

Mama : You didn't expect him to walk through that fire for someone who was not there, what if he died

Lwami : So I was suppose to be dead not him

Mama : Ayy wena you are safe that's what matters right now

Lwami : You should have seen him all confused like he owns this world

Mama : He's confused, he thought you died seeing you only brought him confusion, unresolved feelings, love, happiness and babey Melusi has always been like that, you couldn't understand if he's happy or angry, he's motionless you just need to talk to him, a lot has happened in his life, he thought you and his brother were dead

Lwami : That heartless uncle of mine

Mama : That's a story for another day for now you need to stay in that room and heal first cause I know you

Lwami : Thanks mama Sindi when are you coming back?

Mama : I'll come on Thursday

Lwami : One day to go 😊 at least I'll see you

Mama : Yes babey I love you

Lwami : I love you even more mama

Mama : Bye 😊❤️

Lwami : Bye

They hung up their phone and Lwami just laid down in her bed when the door flung open

Sizwe : wake up

Lwami : What did I do?

Sizwe : Why did you lie about your boyfriend? Were you stalking your father? Is that why you wanted to go to New York last year? Were you following him? What's wrong my baby?

Lwami : I WANTED HIM IN MY LIFE TO PROTECT ME SINCE YOU WERE IN JAIL 😞


Sizwe : To protect you from what?

Lwami : A lot was happening here when you were in jail

Sizwe : In this house?

Lwami : Ye... No

Sizwe : Young girl speak right now

Lwami : Nothing's wrong I just....I just wanted to know him, for him to know me, for him t... To... To 

Sizwe : You should have told me Nana I would have told him the truth earlier, I didn't see that you were so obsessed with him 😞

Lwami : I wanted him to protect me from this world while you were in jail

Sizwe : Your uncle was here moss

Lwami didn't say anything she just cried

Sizwe : Wasn't he here Thandolwami? 🤔

Lwami :

Sizwe : THANDO???

Lwami :

Sizwe : You needed protection from him? Oh God!

Thandolwami

Insert 36

Narrated

Sizwe : Thando please talk to me, is he the one who got you pregnant?

Thando looked at her papa and she cried causing Sizwe to spit fire cause he thought that his granddaughter is safe now he's learning that she was in danger all along

Thando : He's not the father

Sizwe : But did he take advantage of you?

Thando : Papa I need to rest am tired

Sizwe : We gonna have this conversation again Thando

Thando looked the other way as for Sizwe he went out of the room to the balcony cause he was so angry how could Bonga do something like this to a child? A child that was suppose to be

under his care 🤔 how cruel is he? 😞 he took his phone and called Gcaba who answered after a while

Gcaba : Sizwe

Sizwe : We have to meet

Gcaba : Yoo this is becoming a habit, couldn't you tell me what you want to say when I was there?

Sizwe : I found out now what I want to tell you Melusi

Gcaba : It's about what Sizwe?

Sizwe : Your daughter

Gcaba : I will come there later on not now

Sizwe : It a matter of life and death

Gcaba felt like suffocating he's just met his daughter now something is threatening her life 🤔👩🤔👩

Gcaba : I'll be there

Sizwe : Sure

Sizwe was adamant that Gcaba will never forgive him after this, how can Bonga do something like this to a young child 😞 where was mama Thandi when all of this happened 💔

ꝰ

ꝰ

ꝰ

ꝰ

After like 20 minutes Gcaba was in the house worried sick cause he wants to know what the hell happened to his daughter

Gcaba : Sizwe

Sizwe : Hey can you sit down

Gcaba : No just talk

Sizwe : I spoke with Thando regarding the issue that we discussed, she then said that she hates you cause you were not there when she needed you the most

Gcaba : Who's fault is that Sizwe? 🤔

Sizwe : I kn...

Gcaba : Wait what do you mean when you say "needed me the most"? Did something happen to my daughter while I was not around? 🤔

Sizwe : I asked her if was Bonga not around for protection

Gcaba : The nerve of you to say that to my child, I was alive for that Sizwe 😊🤔

Sizwe : am sorry okay

Gcaba : 😊

Sizwe : She told me that she needed protection from him

Gcaba : Whoa whoa let me get this straight, ARE YOU TELLING ME THAT.... ****bitter chuckle**** ARE YOU FUCKING WITH ME RIGHT NOW SIZWE? THAT SON OF A BITCH DID WHAT TO MY DAUGHTER? SIZWE I CAME TO YOU EVERY FUCKEN DAY COMPLAINING, CRYING, ANGRY AT YOU FOR BURNING MY DAUGHTER AND YOU FUCKIN SHOWED ME THAT YOU DIDN'T CARE, YOU DIDN'T TELL ME THAT MY DAUGHTER IS ALIVE, CAUSE YOU WERE PROTECTING HER BY HARBOURING HER WITH AN ANIMAL 😞

Gcaba was so angry and he was so red with anger how could his brother do this him, to an unarmed little girl, he hated his father for all of this and hell will freeze 😞

Gcaba : You better tell your son to run cause amma bring hell to earth now where is she? I'm taking her away from this house, I'll rather struggle with her insults than leavr here for your pervert son, I wish he died in that fire..... Thando

He said that shouting while going up, Sizwe was so defeated cause he knows Gcaba and he knew thaf Gcaba hated him but what he saw in his eyes today is beyond the name " hate" he resent him, Gcaba was shouting and Thando came out of his room and he looked at her, he can't show weakness right now, it's not the time

Gcaba : Pack your bags we leaving

Thando : A....

Gcaba : Make sure that you pack your bags all of your clothes cause am here now and I didn't leave you but they told me that you dead,I mourned your death every possible way so my daughter let me help you from this hell pack your bags we going as for your unc.... As for Bonga he'll pay that I promise you 😞

Thando went inside her room and packed her bag, a part of her was so happy, a part of her was so worried and stressed at what if her father will soon get tired of her and bring her back to this house, what if his girlfriend doesn't like her

what if he's far worse than his brother, but she packed her bags and after a while she got out and Gcaba stood up from the floor and carried the bags himself, Thando went to say good bye to her papa

Thando : I'll visit you

Sizwe : No problem

Thando : Thank you for loving me always, thank you for allowing me to go 😞😞

Sizwe : I know this is what you wanted so it's okay my love

They hugged and Thando went to Gcaba's car while looking at the house for the last time

Gcaba : Get in inside

She nodded and got inside the car they drove away in silence, a lot was happening in Gcaba's head he was so lost in thought even Thando can see that he's not okay at all, as much as she feels like she hates her father but a part of her wanted protection from him so it's fine she's going with him, after a while they got inside this beautiful giant house

Gcaba : This is home

Thando : Who you living with?

Gcaba : I used to live with my girlfriend so now am alone at the moment

Thando : Ohh

She got out the car and they went to the house with Gcaba carrying her bags

Gcaba : You can choose a room you want

Thando : Any room is perfect

Gcaba : The security guards room is fine?

Thando : Hahaha that's funny 😊

Gcaba : Am glad you still find humor

Thando : I'll choose a room, can I have my bags?

Gcaba : I'll bring them up

Thando : Okay

Thando went upstairs and chose the room for herself

✘

✘

✘

✘

Gcaba went downstairs and paced up and down until his phone rang he answered

Gcaba : Yaa

Ndile : Whoa chill nigger 😊

Gcaba : Am sorry I have a lot on my mind

Ndile : Don't worry yourself cause I'm coming there to see you after yesterday

Gcaba : Yoo you are a life saviour

Ndile : why?

Gcaba : I'll tell you when you get here

Ndile : Okay am almost there

Gcaba : Okay

They both dropped the call and Gcaba went to the kitchen and Thando was there, he wondered when did she come down

Thando : I was so hungry I hope you don't mind

Gcaba : At all feel free to eat anything you like

Thando : Thanks

Gcaba : Someone will be here in 10 mins

Thando : Your girlfriend?

Gcaba : Yea my girlfriend

Thando : What happened to my mother?

Gcaba : That's a story for another day

Thando : I hope she's still alive, even if she is why didn't she come to search for me

Gcaba : Cause we all thought that you died that day

Thando : You can't feel connected to the person that is yours?

Gcaba : Even if there was something like that Thando I wouldn't have thought you are alive cause my life died with you that day, the person that you looking at right now is no longer the person who was fathering you since birth 🤔

Thando : I grew up umm thinking that you'll come back to see me, my papa didn't tell me that you thinking that am dead, it's the first time hearing that, I knew that my papa was arrested for murder but I thought it was granny alone where as you on the other side thinks that am dead, such a messed up family, I wonder what excuse will my mother say to me cause clearly your own reason is somehow understandable 🤔♀

Gcaba : I don't think your mother is still alive I mean I last saw her when you were reported dead

Thando : Let me hope she's not dead, as much as I hate you guys but I want both my parents to know me, I don't care that you have a new partner and I won't be a snob about it but I want a relationship with both my parents 😞

Gcaba was so hurt cause he killed her mother with good reasons 🤔♀ the same reason that his father killed his wife for while they were talking, Nandile entered the house and a smile turned into a concern 😞

Ndile : Gcaba

Thando and Gcaba turned and looked at her, she just smiled a warm smile

Ndile : I didn't know that you havr visitors

Gcaba : This is my daughter

Ndile : Thought as much

Nandile went to hug Thando at the back

Ndile : Am so happy to finally meet you 😊

Thando stood up and they hugged properly, Thando was just glad that the girlfriend didn't throw tantrum, they pulled out

Ndile : You should have told me Gcaba

Gcaba : I wanted to surprise you

Ndile : 😊 how are you baby? My name is Nandile Zikhali and you are

Thando : Thandolwami Gcaba

Ndile : Ohh what a lovely name well it seems like you the same age as me

Thando : How old are you?

Ndile : 24 years

Thando : Well am 21 years old

Ndile : You got yourself a sexy mama 😊😊😊

Thando : indeed you are sexy 😊

Nandile was so scared cause never have she thought that Gcaba's daughter will be alive and this old, Thando was so worried at what if this is all just an act when her father goes out she'll be a monster mother 😞😞 as for Gcaba he was so happy that Nandile didn't doubt his daughter 😞 his phone rang and he answered

Gcaba : Sure

.....: Hello bhutii

"Yoooo imihlola" that's what he thought to himself and he felt angry right that moment

Gcaba : ****sigh**** where are you?

Bonga : Am in my house, I wanted to meet you so that we can talk

Gcaba : TA..... ****Sigh****

He looked at Thando and Ndile talking so he kept calm but deep down this motherfucker is asking for it

Gcaba : Where?

Bonga : We can meet at your house

Gcaba : I'll send you the address

Bonga : Thanks brother I missed you

Gcaba : Okay

He dropped his call and clicked his tongue 😞 Game On
Bongumusa

Insert 37

Narrated

Gcaba went back to the ladies

Gcaba : Umm Thando can you please excuse us a little

Thando : I'll be in my room

Nandile : I'll see you just now okay?

Thando : Alright thanks

Thando went upstairs leaving these two in the kitchen, Gcaba went to Nandile and pulled her to him

Gcaba : I missed your smell

Ndile : Gosh you a creep

Gcaba : Your creep

He pulled out of the hug and gave her a peck while smirking

Ndile : 😊

Gcaba : Me and you are dating I don't care what you say, anyways thank you for accepting her

Ndile : She's a cool kid

Gcaba : Yea she is, I wanted to tell you something that's why I told Thando to leave us

Ndile : I'm listening

Gcaba : My brother is coming here

Ndile : Oh do you want me to cook?

Gcaba : No babes aibo I want you to take Thando with you for a small time nyana.

Ndile : I would like to meet your brother

Gcaba : Please take care of her for me, I need to handle something am sure we will talk when you get back

Ndile : Okay no worries, you'll tell us when you want us to come back ke

Gcaba : Don't worry I will

Ndile : Let me go and tell Thando

Gcaba : Okay babe I love you ❤️❤️❤️

Ndile : Well I don't

Gcaba : I don't care wjat I know is that I love you so much ❤️

Ndile smiled and went upstairs leaving Gcaba who sent the address to his brother and called Ayanda who answered almost immediately

Ayanda : Boss

Gcaba : 911

Ayanda : Warehouse or your house

Gcaba : My house

Ayanda : Alright

Ayanda hung up his phone and called others, meanwhile Ndile got inside Thando's room

Ndile : Hey

Thando : Oh God you scared me

Ndile : I'm so sorry I didn't mean to

Thando : it fine I can't believe you gonna be my step mother

Ndile : A young girl like me imagine ③

Thando : Tell me about it ③ at least with you I'll be able to vent, confde and do a lot of fun

Ndile : Sure you will, just like now I'm taking you out

Thando : I wanted to rest

Ndile : You saying no to a free juicy meal

Thando : temptations at it best

Ndile : I'll leave you ke with your dry throat

Thando : Am so tired hey

Ndile : Your uncle is coming so your father wanted me to take you out

Thando kept quiet and Nandile saw fear in her eyes, the same fear she had when she was abused by Sambulo, is this girl being abused by this brother of Gcaba or something she thought to herself

Thando : I'll come

Ndile : Okay, let's go

Thando pretended to smile and Ndile saw that ③ they went downstairs to be met by Gcaba

Ndile : We leaving

Gcaba : Okay, yol can take my card

Ndile : We won't say no to free money

Gcaba : Gold diggish ③

Ndile : Call me whatever you want let's go baby

Ndile and Thando went away leaving Gcaba smiling alone like an idiot his phone rang and he answered it

Gcaba : Sure

Dad : Melusi

Gcaba : Sizwe

Dad : Bonga just told me that he's coming there

Gcaba : Yes he is coming here

Dad : Can I also be there? I mean we don't know how dangerous he is

Gcaba : Don't worry yourself Sizwe I'll be fine

Dad : Gcaba

Gcaba : Come on Sizwe I'll be fine

Dad : Where is Thando?

Gcaba : She went out with Ndile

Dad : Ohh okay that's good the last thing we need is her being stressed cause it going to affect the baby

Gcaba : She will be okay don't worry

Dad : Okay I'll call you again later to check on you

Gcaba : Alright

They hung up their phone after a while there was a knock on the door so Gcaba went to open he was met by his brother, Gcaba pretended to smile and his brother smiled back

Bonga : Bhuti

Gcaba : Come in

He came in and placed the bag he was holding on the table that was in lounge so they went to the office upstairs

Gcaba : Drink?

Bonga : No I just wanna be sober for this ③

Gcaba : How are you?

He stood up and went to pour himself a drink and gulped it down cause he was so angry but was keeping his cool down

Bonga : all is well

Gcaba : Why didn't you reach out to me?

Bonga : I just thought you didn't want me in your life

Gcaba : How come? I mean you saw how devastated I was because of this

Bonga : People pretend Gcaba, they pretend to be all cool or sad or whatever the case may be so I thought you were pretending

Gcaba : Do you hate me?

Bonga : I don't know

He stood up and went to stand by the window while looking outside and clenching his jaw

Bonga : I bet you can ask that question may be later.

Gcaba looked at Bonga and he saw so much darkness in him the question was in his mind, does Bonga hate him? Why did he rape his daughter? Was it revenge

Bonga was still standing there

Gcaba : Can I ask you something?

Bonga : What's that?

Gcaba : Thando

Bonga : The answer is No I didn't rape her, she's lying

Gcaba : How did you know what I was gonna ask?

Bonga : I just know

Gcaba : WHAT DO Y....

Bonga : Breath Gcaba breath

Gcaba : Fusek don't tell me to breath

Bonga : I see your guys are here, so what was the plan Gcaba?
You'll kill me? Kidnap me? What was the bloody plan

Gcaba : I swear to God if you don't tell me the truth right now I
won't be responsible for what I will do to you right now

Bonga : I want to do me this one favour tell your dogs to go
back where ever they coming from

Gcaba : You not gonna tell me what to do wena

Bonga took out his gun so is Gcaba he also took out his Gun,
they were looking at each other with so much hate, Bonga was
hating Gcaba cause he didn't care about him when he was lost
and Gcaba was hating him because of raping his daughter

Bonga : 😊

Bonga laughed while looking at his brother with disgust 😊

Bonga : Gcaba am not stupid, you sent your bitch to go do some shoppings because you wanted to hide that little of slut of yours from me ③ that's not gonna work, you see I'm Bongumusa Gcaba and you, your FATHER! yol created this animal I am so am

gonna tell you one last time tell your stupid minions to get the hell out of this property or I swear to God I will make sure that those guys who have your girls they kill them

Gcaba felt weak in his knees, what does he mean he have his girls

Gcaba : Where are they?

Bonga : Move Gcaba go tell your boys to leave

Gcaba : Fine I'll go tell them.

Gcaba went downstairs to his boys

Gcaba : Ayanda my girls he got them

Ayanda : B...

Gcaba : I don't have time find my girls and bring the home I will deal with this now leave this house.

Ayanda : Okay

Gcaba : Tell Nka to call Sizwe

Ayanda : Sure

Gcaba : LEAVE

He was pretending so that Bonga will see that he's chasing the out, they went out and Gcaba went upstairs

Gcaba : They gone

Bonga : You think I'm stupid?

Gcaba : You asked me to chase them out I did that

Bonga : Why did you tell them about the girls?

Gcaba realised that this maniac of his brother planted some bug into his house 盈♀

Gcaba : You want me not the girl Bonga, leave them out of this

Bonga : Yaz Mkhuseleli came to me the other day he told me about this bitch Nandile

Gcaba felt like killing this stupid idiot but he wanted to know that the girls are safe first

Bonga : I told him that he must forget about Nandile but he kept

on insisting that I help him, I did the girls are with Mkhuseleli and he will soon take a helicopter to a far away place where you will never get to see your slut of a daughter and your bitch, you undermined me I see you even calling your father uSizwe the one who knows about all of this and he doesn't care about you at all just like YOU DIDN'T CARE ABOUT ME! YOU WILL DIE TODAY GCABA AND THIS PLACE WILL BE A BETTER PLACE WITHOUT THE LIKES OF YOU, BUSY PRETENDING LIKE YOU LOVE THAT GIRL FOR HOW LONG? FOR HOW BLOODY LONG?

Gcaba : Bonga you don't want to see me angry

Bonga : Oh believe me I want to see you I WANT TO SEE THE PERSON WHO'S HEARTLESS, THE PERSON WHO BURNED HIS BABY MOMMA DOES YOUR PRECIOUS "NDILE" KNOWS THIS?

DOES SHE KNOW THAT YOU WILL NOT HESITATE TO KILL HER IF SHE CHEAT? BUT NOT ANYMORE! YOU ASKED ME EARLIER ON IF I HATED YOU I DO 盈♀ I hate you Gcaba, I hate you with passion so those girls are better off without you.

Gcaba : So you'll rather sell the to a woman abuser than to let them live their life without me

Bonga : I don't care they not mine to keep safe.

Finale

Insert 38

Narrated

Nkanyezi called Sizwe who answered almost immediately

Sizwe : Hello

Nka : Baba this is Nkanyezi

Sizwe : Oh is everything okay?

Nka : Apparently Bonga has held Gcaba hostage

Sizwe : 盈♀ That's why I wanted to be there when Gcaba meets Bonga I should go there

Nka : He also abducted the girls

Sizwe : WHAT? Nka can you find the girls I need to go and Protect my son from Bonga

Nka : I will do so

Sizwe hung up the phone and ran to his car, his mind was racing
盈♀ he was wondering what can he do cause he knows that his
son is good with bombs and for sure there is a bomb
inside that house (8) he can't lose Gcaba he'll rather die than
look at his son's killing each other, he understands Gcaba's
anger towards Bonga, he doesn't understand Bonga's anger
towards Gcaba (8)

Meanwhile Ayanda and the crew were at the warehouse trying
to track where Nandile is because most of her handbag have a
bug that was placed by Gcaba

Ayanda : Are you winning Sandile?

Sandile : Almost

Msizi : Did anyone call Skhalo?

Ayanda : Shit 盈♀ let me call him now

Ayanda stepped outside and called Skhalo who answered on a
third ring

Skhalo : Ayanda

Ayanda : Skhalo 911

Skhalo : Shit who's in trouble?

Ayanda : Gcaba, Nandile and Thando

Skhalo : Nandile

His Dad : What happened to Nandile

Skhalo's parent were still there so his father heard the way
Skhalo called Nandile that there's trouble 盈♀

Skhalo : I will be there just now

Ayanda : Okay we still trying to trace her

Skhalo : Okay

Skhalo ended the call defeated and wondered when will his
sister find happiness kant

Sgadu : Will you tell me what happened to my daughter?

Skhalo : Baba she's nowhere to be found

Sgadu : Where are you going pho?

Skhalo : My friends are trying to find her

Sgadu : I'm coming with you

Skhalo : No tata you don't have to come I will bring your daughter back home

Sgadu : If you don't what must I do to you?

Skhalo : I will I promise

Sgadu left Skhalo who was devastated cause he don't know if he will find her sister alive this time around

✘

✘

✘

✘

✘

Gcaba : Please Bonga it's me that you want not my girls (8)

Bonga : Hearing you saying "My girls" it's enough to make me want to kill you right now

Bonga's phone rang and it was his father and he answered with a smirk

Bonga : Sizwe

Gcaba felt like screaming because for once he thought that maybe Bonga was lying his father would never betray him again but again his father is yet again hurting him 盈♀ he was so angry while Bonga was still talking on the phone and his back was facing Gcaba

Bonga : No dad you can....

Gcaba hit him with a vase on his head he fell down and a gun went off

Sizwe : Gcabaaaaaaaaaaa

Sizwe was so losing it he thought to himself that this time he lost his son he was driving like a maniac, Gcaba took his car

keys at the table and tried to rush outside while halfway a gun went off he was shot in his left leg he groaned while falling down

Gcaba : Shit!

Gcaba didn't shoot Bonga a gun went off because it was in Bonga's hand when he was falling from the injury, he came towards the groaning Gcaba

Bonga : Not so fast, never turn your back on your enemy

Gcaba : Bonga I wanna save my daughter and my girlfriend, Sambulo will kill Thando, IS THAT WHAT YOU WANT?

Bonga : I don't care Gcaba, there's a bomb in that bag I came with, me and you will end this hatred we have for each other cause we will die together with the fire that separated us when we were young

Gcaba : I didn't know you were alive Bongumusa, Sizwe made me believe that you died together with my child please bro let me go

Bonga : Stop lying Dad would never do that to me

Gcaba : He did, HE BLOODY DID, COME ON BONGA WHY WOULD I LEAVE YOU?

Bonga : Because you are so greedy that's why, you so heartless that's why, you are so full of yourself that's why GCABA THE MIGHTY GCABA

Gcaba was so defeated but he won't just die without a fight

Bonga : 5 mins left

Gcaba thought of something so he just used his right leg to kick Bonga, he groaned so Gcaba tried to stand up but Bonga was quick he went on to of him and punched him like nobody's business, Gcaba used his last power to push him to the wall and he succeeded, so he tried to stand and found a light pole so he took it cause Bonga was coming towards him so he bashed his him with the pole they fought but in his mind he was thinking about the bomb, he was thinking about his girls, he was so weak instead of being strong the fear of losing them was just too much for him

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Meanwhile

Nandile was so dead scared cause she can see Sambulo who was looking at them with so much anger (8) she stood up leaving the drugged Thando who was beside her she went to Sambulo

Ndile : Sambulo

Sambulo : You remember me now?

Ndile : I do

Sambulo : You pregnant? With his child Nandile? YOU CAN'T CLOSE YOUR LEGS WENA!

He stood up and that was too much to make Nandile scared cause she knew a slap will follow

Ndile : I'm sorry Sambulo but we can't be in a relationship you know that you toxic I think it best if we go our separate way, we tried Sambulo but we failed

Sambulo : You didn't try anything Nandile, Nothing at all

Ndile : I did try Sambulo, I blocked my family out of my life for you, forgave you while you slapped me the first time, ignored the abuse sign because I loved you, I chose you over everything in

my life Sambulo but you wanted to kill me because I was trying to save myself from what you were becoming I tried Sambulo I really did try to love you but you failed me

Sambulo : Ndile

Ndile : No Sambulo you broke me, you made me love myself less, you made me a weakling, you made me useless because of loving you, believe me I loved you so much and didn't want to lose you but you the one who wanted to lose me, you wanted me dead that's not love Sambulo, what if I died who would you be kidnapping if I died? No one you'll be moving on

with your life, why can't you do that? For me show me the love you have for me


Sambulo : You'll be moving on with your life With Gcaba

Ndile : He made me what I am today, he made me strong, he pulled me out from the dark hole I was in Sambulo and showed me love that you failed to show me, he not perfect but he's trying that what I wanted you to do for me but you didn't

Sambulo : I'm sorry

He looked away cause what Nandile was saying really did make sense

Sambulo : I love you believe me I do a lot and it killing me, I try to forget Nandile I can't, I lived while thinking you died but my soul was not resting cause I killed that one person I love

wholeheartedly what you saying is true you do deserve someone who'll love you not me, I'm gonna try to find help and maybe one day I'll get married and be happy, maybe one day I'll make my wife happy and love her more than I did in this relationship ngyaxolisa  now we have to save Gcaba from Bonga

Ndile : What?

Sambulo : Bonga have Gcaba

Ndile : Gcaba will save himself am sure of that

Sambulo : The house is covered with bombs

Ndile : No no no

Sambulo : Calm down please

Ndile : Don't tell me to calm down Sambulo what if, oh my God we have to go there

Sambulo, carry her to the car now

Nandile ran to the car she had to save her lover, she had to save her boyfriend, she felt weak and thoughts were running through her mind what if he dies what will she tell the children when

the grow old, she was crying a river

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Gcaba was still fighting with Bonga until he lost his power because of being shot in the leg and he thought to himself that maybe the bullet have poison (8)

Bonga : I think I'll have to kill you myself before you do something stupid

He took the gun that was on the floor and pointed it at uGcaba he just closed his eyes and a gun just went off and blood splattered on his face

Advertisement

he opened his eyes the body fell on top of him he quickly removed it and looked at the corner he saw Sizwe he was confused now because Bonga said that Sizwe also wanted to kill him

Sizwe : We don't have much time

He went to him and placed him on his shoulder the bomb was on 10 secs now, Sizwe's heart was beating out of his chest he didn't want his son to die, he owe him that much he ran until

he got to the door and the bomb just went off luckily they were already outside they fell but he quickly stood up and ran to the gate all this while Nandile, The boys they heard the bomb cause they were on their way to the house

Nandile felt herself dying inside, Sambulo so wished he didn't die cause he can't really do with a heartbroken Nandile right he owe her that much, Ayanda and the crew were hoping that their boss is alive

Sizwe got to the gate and took his phone out but luckily two cars parked beside him and the boys got out

Ayanda : Is he alright?

Sizwe : Any doctor here? Please help my son

Msizi : I will do

Another car parked beside them and Nandile walked out of the car running

Ndile : Where's Gcaba? Where is he?

Skhalo : Sisi

Ndile : Where is he? Don't tell me he's dead

She looked around and saw someone on the floor, she ran to him while crying but when Gcaba saw Nandile his heart was at peace he closed his eyes

Ndile : No Gcaba don't die on me
NOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOO

Sambulo went out of the car and everyone pointed a gun at him

Sambulo : I didn't do anything

Ayanda : Fusek thulaaaa (Shut up)

Msizi : He's not dead we need to take him to the hospital

Msizi and Sizwe took him to the car, Sgadu got to them cause Skhalo called him he was so worried about his daughter

Msizi : Are you coming with us?

Ndile : Yes can you guys please let sambulo go he's not worth it at all

Sgadu (Nandile's father) looked at this Sambulo and chuckled, everyone else looked at Nandile like she's crazy but in all honesty she's so tired of fighting she just want to live her life with Gcaba and their children

Ndile : Can you guys help me with Thando she's in the car, she's drugged so she hasn't woke up as yet I don't know what's going on 盈♀

Sgadu : I'll take her

He went to the car and took Thando, they rushed them to the hospital, Sambulo wanted to also get away from all of this so he went to his car leaving the boys and Sgadu outside the gate, they called the fire fighters to come and help, Sambulo drove away with a heavy heart but he wanted to leave and never looked back something was making noise at the backseat he decided to look back what he saw was enough to make him pee on himself

Sambulo : No no no no

When he stopped the car it was too late the car busted ♀ it was the end of him the guys were so amazed cause the car was not so far from where they were

Ayanda : What just happened?

Sgudu : That my friend is what happens when you mess up with my daughter's life and think you walk out free

He said that while going into his car and all of them bowed, he just laughed and drove away.

Sandile : Aibo skhalo you didn't tell us that your father is this dangerous

Nka : He was a soldier so it was their job to be that fast

Ayanda : I mean he didn't even take 1 min taking out Thando ♀

Skhalo : He only needs 1 sec

Nka : To even think that this guy was taking Nandile to this house to murder her 盈♀ only to find that they forgave each other,

Nandile have a good heart I don't think I'll ever forgive someone who did what Sambulo did to her

Skhalo : She loved her that's why

Ayanda : If you say so 盈♀ where are these guys kant

Skhalo : They coming

They continued to talk while laughing and joking around

✘

✘

✘

✘

After a while Thando was awake so Ndile went to check up on her with Sizwe

Thando : Mkhulu

Sizwe : Hey babey

Thando looked at the worried Ndile and she smiled assuring her that everything is alright

Ndile : You scared me, for a moment there I thought I lost you

Thando : I'm here don't worry

Ndile : I'm glad you are awake

Thando : Where's my father?

Msizi walked in with some files in his hands

Msizi : My patient is awake

Thando : Yes

Msizi : That's good, I also have some news we gonna keep you here for the following days

Thando : Why?

Msizi : You may be due in one or two days

Thando : Is my baby okay?

Msizi : Don't worry yourself she's okay

Sizwe : She?

Msizi : It a girl

Thando : That's good, thank you so much doctor

Msizi : Call me Baba cause you'll be seeing more of me

Thando : Baba

Msizi : Speaking about your father he's also awake

Thando : What happened to him

Msizi : Hey hey hey don't stress yourself he was injured but he's okay now

Ndile : Can I see him?

Sizwe : My daughter can I see him first? ⑧

Ndile : No problem baba you can see him

Ndile was so happy that Gcaba is out of danger

Ꝁ

Ꝁ

Ꝥ

Ꝥ

Sizwe went to Gcaba's ward and he was wide awake

Sizwe : Melusi

Gcaba : Qiniso

Sizwe : Huh?

Gcaba : You can call me Qiniso

Sizwe : Really?

Gcaba : Yes thank you so much baba for saving me, for a moment there I thought I was gonna lose my life, it is today that I saw that I'm not heartless but I was in pain of losing my family, I was hurting and took it out on people, Today made me realise

that I'm not cut out to be a gangster or a heartless monster but am just human, I looked at my brother and I saw myself in his eyes, I felt his anger, I felt his rage that's why I couldn't kill him, that's why I couldn't end his life, end his misery because he was miserable, I just told myself if he kills me so be it but I will never kill him, but am glad you came and killed him for me, you ended all the pain he was feeling

Sizwe : Am sorry I caused all the pain

Gcaba : It's okay let's not dwell in the past now it's all over

Sizwe : I saw Sambulo

Gcaba : Where?

Sizwe : he's the one who drove Nandile to your house

Gcaba : Really?

Person : Yes really

They looked at the door and it was Nandile's father he walked in together with his wife

Gcaba : Where is he?

Sgadu : Apparently my daughter forgave him and all

Gcaba : Wow that's is so huge

Sgadu : It's huge but he's dead so no need to dwell on him now

Ndile : DEAD!

She also said that coming inside the room cause she so wanted to see his soul mate

Sgadu : Yes, if you know what's good for you my boy you will treat her with love, kindness cause believe me if you don't I will blow your head with missile gun don't say I didn't warn you

Sizwe : Okay okay champ let's leave the kids

Sgadu : I promise

He was so scary that even Gcaba was swallowing the spit so hard (8) they walked out leaving them

Ndile : 😊

Gcaba : 😊

Ndile : So...

Gcaba : So??

Ndile : I'm so glad you awake I almost died when you closed your eyes

Gcaba : I was at peace when I saw you cause you and my children were only thing that was on my mind

Ndile : Thank you Melusi, Thank you so much

Gcaba : For what?

Ndile : For loving me, for your kindness, for your caring for everything you've done for me

Gcaba : 😊

Ndile : When you first met me I was a mess, I didn't trust myself enough, I lost my self esteem, I lost my confidence, I lost my word but on our first encounter you showed me the rawness I thought I lost you pulled me out of the mess I was living in, you gave me strength, you gave me hope you taught me to love myself and today I can walk without my make up on because of you, thank you so much I love you and I don't think I can live

without you our children need you and I need you more don't ever ever decide to run away when things get tricky cause we in it both of us, your love has made me alive

Gcaba : I love you ❤️ Thank you for being in my life I don't have much to say but your love has taught me something today and from today onwards I'm a new person, we'll walk this new journey

together the 6 of us

Ndile : Till forever

Gcaba : Till forever

Indeed my pain became a victory cause my ended let me to this man I call my soulmate right now ❤️

Summary

ǻ Gcaba and Ndile tied the knot

ǻ They got themselves a beautiful girl by the name of Larona Meluthando Gcaba ❤️

ǻ Skhalo and Zama decided to give their relationship a try

ǻ Thando also bonded with her father and the whole family, she

really got over her wanting her mother because she was receiving all the love from her mother (Nandile)

ǻ Turned out that the reason why Nandile's mother was called at the military at those years back, Nandile's father lost his left leg but the doctors helped him, it was so painful for Nandile because she was not there through the process ☹️

ǻ Skhalo loved his siblings with all his heart

They all lived a happily ever after and Gcaba retired from being a gangster cause he realized that he's not cut up for that.

.....**The End**.....

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>

And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it <https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>